Graiméar na Gaedhilge

Christian Brothers

1906

Exported from Wikisource on November 4, 2021

Sgrìobhaidh na Aoisean
leis na
Sgrìobhadairean
Sgìreil.

1906

Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

THIRD EDITION – REVISED.

CAHILL & CO., Printers, Dublin.

PREFACE.

THE Grammar of Spoken Irish presents many difficulties owing to the forms peculiar to different places, but as the literary usage embraces the dialects current in different localities, save a few archaic survivals, the literary usage has been adopted as the standard of this grammer.

Modern Irish may be said to date from the end of the 16th, or the beginning of the 17th century. At the commencement of the modern period many forms are found which belong to an earlier period, and many forms which have since grown obsolete, side by side with those by which they have since been replaced. We have deemed it advisable not to

introduce into this grammer any obsolete grammatical forms, how prominent soever they may be in early modern literature. However, as students preparing for public examinations are frequently required to read the works of early modern authors, we have added in the present edition an appendix containing the verb-system of early modern Irish. Such early modern grammatical forms as survive only within a small area are not given in the large type; on the other hand, those grammatical forms generally found in literature, and which are still in use in any one of the three Irish-speaking Provinces, are given in the large print in preference to those more generally used by Irish speakers, but which are not found in literary works. It is hoped that this method may help to popularise Irish literature, and to reconcile in some degree the slight discrepancies which exist between the spoken and the literary usages.

In the present Grammar the letters l, n, and r are reckoned among the aspirable consonants, and s is omitted from the eclipsable ones. The declension of verbal nouns is transferred from the third declension to the chapter on the verbs. A collection of heteroclite nouns is inserted. The usual declension of the personal pronouns is not employed, and the terms Conjunctive and Disjunctive pronouns are adopted. The naming of the four principal parts of an Irish verb, the treatment of the Autonomous form of conjugation, the rejection of compound prepositions, infinitive mood, and present participle form a few of the features of this

grammar. Among the appendices will be found lists of words belonging to the various declensions, of verbs of both conjugation, and of irregular verbal nouns.

Many of the rules have been taken from the "O'Growney Series" and from the "Gaelic Journal." The grammars of Neilson, O'Donovan, Bourke, Craig, and of many other authors, have been consulted. The chapter on the classification of the uses of the prepositions is based on Dr. Atkinson's edition of Keating's Trí Bior-ġaoiṫe an Ḃáis. Some of the sentences which illustrate the rules have been culled, with the author's permission, from the Mion-ċaint of the Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P.

In the present edition the enunciation of the rule Caol le caol ⁊ leaṫan le leaṫan has been modified so as to bring it more into harmony with the spoken language. The sections on the Relative pronouns, Demonstrative pronouns, Adverbs, and Conjunctions have been greatly enlarged and improved. A large collection of Idiomatic expressions and an exhaustive Index have been also added.

The Christian Brothers acknowledge with pleasure their indebtedness to Mr. John McNeill, B.A., and Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P., for their generous and invaluable aid in the production of this grammar. To Mr. R. J. O'Mulrenin, M.A., Mr. J. H. Lloyd, to Mr. Shortall, and to many other friends

their best thanks are due, and gratefully tendered.

CONTENTS.

	Page
The Letters	1
Sounds of the Vowels	2
The Diphthongs	2
The Triphthongs	3
Consonants, Division of the	4
„ Combination of the	6
Accent	6
„ Words distinguished by	7
Obscure Sounds of the Vowels	7
Aspiration, Explanation of	9
„ How marked	10
„ Rules for	11
Eclipsis	13
„ Rules for	15
Insertion of n	16
„ t	17
„ h	18
Attenuation and Broadening	18
Caol le caol 7 leaṫan le leaṫan	19
Syncope, Explanation of	20
„ Examples of	21
The Article	23

„ Initial changes produced by 23
Gender, Rules for 26
Cases, Number of 28
„ Rules for formation of the 28
First Declension 30
„ Examples of vowel-changes 33
„ Irregular Genitive Singular 34
„ Irregular Nominative Plural 34
Second Declension 36
„ Examples of vowel-changes 37
„ Irregular Genitive Singular 39
„ Irregular Nominative Plural 39
Third Declension 41
„ Irregular Nominative Plural 44
Fourth Declension 45
„ Irregular Nominative Plural 46
Fifth Declension 47
Heteroclite Nouns 51
Irregular Nouns 52
The Adjective 56
„ First Declension 56
„ Second Declension 59
„ Third Declension 60
„ Fourth Declension 60
„ Aspiration of 61

„ Eclipsis of 62
„ Comparison of 63
„ Irregular Comparison 68
Numeral Adjectives 69
„ „ Notes on 71
Personal Numerals 73
Possessive Adjectives 74
Demonstrative „ 78
Indefinite „ 79
Distributive „ 82
Interrogative „ 82
Intensifying Particles 66
Emphatic „ 75
Translation of “Some” 80
„ “Any” 81
The Pronoun
Personal 83
Reflexive 84
Conjunctive and Disjunctive 85
Neuter Pronoun eadh 86
Prepositional 87
Relative 91
Demonstrative 93
Indefinite 94

Distributive 95
Interrogative 96
Reciprocal 97
The Verb
Conjugations, Number of 98
„ Three forms of 99
„ Autonomous form of 100
Moods, Number of 102
Tenses, Number of 103
„ Various forms of the 104
Principle Parts of a Verb 106
„ Examples of 107
First Conjugation 108
„ Notes on Moods and Tenses of 112
Rule for Aspiration of t of the Past Participle 116
Participle of Necessity 116
Derivative Participles 117
Declension of Verbal Nouns 118
Second Conjugation 118
Verbs in ig and uig 119
Syncopated Verbs 120
Rules for formation of Verbal Noun 125
Irregular Verbs 127

Irregular Verbs, Absolute and Dependent forms of 138
Táim 127
Is 133
Beir 136
Taḃair 137
Abair 140
Gaḃ 142
Faġ 142
Deun 145
Feic 147
Clois or Cluin 150
Tar 150
Téiġ (Téiḋ) 152
Iṫ 154
Riġim 155
Defective Verbs
Ar, Dar, Feadar 156
Ṫárla, D'ḟóbair, Feudaim 157
Adverbs 157

Interrogative Words 160
"Up and Down," &c. 160
"This side, that side," &c. 162
"Over" 162
North, South, East, West 163
Compound or Phrase Adverbs 164
Days of the Week 167
"Head-foremost" 167
"However" 168
The Adverb "The" 168
Prepositions 168
Conjunctions 168
Use of ná and ná go 170
Use of mar 170
Interjections 171
Word-Building
Prefixes 173
Affixes 176
Diminutives 178
„ in ín 179
„ in án 179
„ in óg 180
Derivative Nouns 181

Compound Nouns 182
Derivative Adjectives 186
Verbs derived from Nouns 190
„ „ Adjectives 191
Syntax of the Article 192
Article used in Irish but not in English 193
Syntax of the Noun 196
Apposition 197
Collective Nouns 197
Personal Numerals 198
Personal Nouns 199
Syntax of the Adjective 201
Adjective used Attributively 202
„ Predicatively 204
Numeral Adjectives 205
Dual Number 209
Possessive Adjectives 211
Syntax of the Pronoun 213
Relative Pronoun 214
Translation of the Genitive case of the English Relative 216
Syntax of the Verb 218
Uses of the Subjunctive Mood 219
Relative form of the Verb 221
Verbal Noun and its Functions 224

How to translate the English Infinitive 226
Definition of a Definite Noun 235
When to use the Verb is 236
Position of Words with is 240
Translation of the English Secondary Tenses 241
Prepositions after Verbs 243
Translation of the Word “Not” 246
Syntax of the Preposition 249
Translation of the Preposition “For” 256
„ „ “Of” 260
Uses of the Preposition 262
Specimens of Parsing 284
Idioms 289
Idiomatic Phrases 305
The Autonomous form of the Irish Verb 315
Appendices
i. List of Nouns belonging to First Declension 325
ii. List of Feminine Nouns ending in a broad consonant belonging to Second Declension 327
iii. List of Nouns belonging to Third Declension 329
iv. List of Nouns belonging to Fifth Declension 333

v. List of Irregular Verbal Nouns 334
vi. List of Verbs of First Conjugation 336
vii. List of Syncopated Verbs 338
viii. Termination of the Regular Verbs in present-day usage 339
ix. Verb-System of Early Modern Irish 340
Index 343

This work was published before January 1, 1926 and it is anonymous or pseudonymous due to unknown authorship. It is in the **public domain** in the United States as well as countries and areas where the copyright terms of anonymous or pseudonymous works are **100 years or less since publication**.

PART I.—ORTHOGRAPHY.

CHAPTER I.

The Letters.

1. The Irish alphabet contains eighteen letters, five of which are vowels, the remaining thirteen are consonants.

The vowels are a, e, i, o, u; and the consonants are b, c, d, f, g, h, l, m, n, p, r, s, t.

2. The vowels are divided into two classes.

(1) The **broad** vowels: a, o, u.

(2) The **slender** vowels: e, i.

The vowels may be either long or short. The long vowels are marked by means of an acute accent (´) placed over the vowel, as mór (big) pronounced like the English word *more*; a short vowel has no accent, as mol (praise), pronounced like *mul* in the English word *mulberry*. Carefully distinguish between the terms "broad vowel" and "long vowel." The broad vowels (a, o, u) are not always

long vowels, neither are the slender vowels (e, i) always short.

In writing Irish we must be careful to mark the accents on long vowels. See words distinguished by accent, par. 14.

3. Sounds of the Vowels.

The Irish vowel	is sounded like	in the words
á long	au	naught
	as in bád (baudh), boat	
a short	o	not
	"	glas (gloss), green
é long	ae	Gaelic
	"	cré (kĭr-aé), clay
e short	e	let
	"	te (t'ye), hot
í	ee	feel
	"	máilín (mawil-een), little bag
i	i	hit
	"	fir (fir), men
ó	ō	note
	"	mór (mōr), big, large
o	ŏ, ŭ	dŏne or mŭch
	"	doras (dhur-us), a door
ú	oo	tool
	"	glún (gloon), a knee
u	u	bull or put
	"	ursa (ursu), a door-jamb

A short vowel at the end of an Irish word *is always pronounced*.

The Digraphs.

4. The following list gives the sounds of the digraphs in Modern Irish. The first five are always long and require no accent. The others are sometimes long and sometimes short, hence the accent ought not to be omitted.[1]

ia		is pronounced like	ee-a	as	Dia (dyee-a), God.
ua		"	oo-a	"	fuar (foo-ar), cold.
eu	or éa	"	ae	"	feur (faer), grass.
ae		"	ae	"	laeṫe (lae-hĕ), days.
ao		"	ae	"	daor (dhaer), dear.
eó		"	yó	"	ceol (k-yōl), music.
iú		"	ew	"	fiú (few), worthy.
ái		"	au+ĭ	"	cáin (kau-ĭn), a tax.
éi		"	ae+ĭ	"	léim (lyae-ĭm), a leap.
ói		"	ō+ĭ	"	móin (mō-ĭn), a bog.
úi		"	oo+ĭ	"	súil (soo-ĭl), an eye.
eá		"	aa	"	caisleán (kosh-laan[2]), a castle.
ío		"	ee	"	fíor (feer), true.
ai ea	}	"	a	"	tais (thaish), damp. fear (far), a man.
ei		"	e	"	eile (el-ĕ), other.
oi		"	ŭ+i	"	toil (thŭ-il), a will.
		"	i	"	

io ui	}			fios (fiss), knowledge. uisge (ish-ge), water.
eo		"	ŭ "	deoċ (d'yukh), a drink.
aí (= aiḋe)		"	ee "	cotaí (kō-thee), coats.

The Trigraphs.

5. There are six trigraphs in Irish. They are pronounced as follows:—

aoi	=	ee	saoi (see)=a wise man.
eoi	=	ō+ĭ	dreoilín (d'rō-il-een)=a wren.
eái	=	aa+ĭ	caisleáin (kosh-laain) = castles.
iai[3]	=	eea+ĭ	liaiġ (lee-ĭh) = a physician.
uai[4]	=	oo+ĭ	fuair (foo-ĭr) = found.
iui	=	ew+i	ciuin (kew+ĭn) = calm.

The Consonants.

6. The consonants are usually divided into two classes.

(1) The liquids—l, m, n, r.

(2) The mutes—b, c, d, f, g, p, s, t.

The letter h is not given, for h is not usually recognised as an Irish letter. It can be used only as a sign of aspiration, or at the beginning of a word, to separate two vowels sounds.

Some grammarians divide the consonants into labials, dentals, palatals, gutturals, sibilants, &c., according to the organs employed in producing the sound.

7. Every Irish consonant has two natural[5] sounds, according as it is *broad* or *slender*.

An Irish consonant is broad whenever it immediately precedes or follows a broad vowel (a, o, u) An Irish consonant is slender whenever it immediately precedes or follows a slender vowel (e, i).

8. The Irish consonants, when broad, have a much thicker sound than in English; e.g. d broad has nearly the sound of *th* in thy, i.e. *d* + *h*; t broad has nearly the sound of *th* in threw, &c. When slender the Irish consonants (except s) have somewhat the same sound as in English; but when they are followed by a slender vowel, they are pronounced somewhat like the corresponding English consonant

followed immediately by a *y*, e.g. ceol (music) is pronounced k' yōl; beo (alive) = b'yō.

It must not, however, be understood that there is a "*y* sound" in the Irish consonant. The peculiar sound of the Irish consonants when followed by a slender vowel is fairly well represented by the corresponding English consonant + an English "*y* sound." In some parts of the country this "*y* sound" is not heard. The *y* is *only suggestive*, and is never heard as a distinct sound.

Combination of the Consonants.

9. There are certain Irish consonants which, when they come together in the same word, do not coalesce, so that when they are uttered a very short obscure vowel sound is heard between them.

This generally occurs in the case of two liquids or a liquid and a mute. Thus balḃ (dumb) is pronounced boll-ŭv ; leanḃ (a child) is lyan-ŭv; dorċa (dark) is dhur-ŭchŭ; margaḋ (a market) is mor-ŭgu.

The following combinations do not coalesce: cn, lḃ, lg, lm, rb, rḃ, rg, rn, lṁ, nḃ, nṁ, rṁ, nċ, rċ.

10. In some combinations, *one of the consonants is silent*.

dl is pronounced like ll

dn " nn

nd " nn

ln " ll

Thus, codlad (sleep) is pronounced kullŭ.

ceudna (same) " kaenŭ.

gránda (ugly) " graun-ŭ.

áilne (beauty) " aul-yĕ.

Notice the difference between ng and gn.

long (a ship) is pronounced lŭng.

gnó (work) " gŭn-ō.

11. Only three of the Irish consonants, viz. the liquids l, n, r may be doubled. This doubling can take place only at the end or the middle of words, but never at the beginning. The double liquids have quite distinct sounds from the single, except in Munster, where, in some positions, double liquids influence vowels. This doubling at the end of a word does not denote shortness of the preceding vowel, as in English:

in fact, it is quite the opposite; e.g. ea in fearr (better) is longer than ea in fear (a man).

In Irish there is no double consonant like the English *x*, which = *ks*.

Accent.

12. The only accent sign used in writing Irish is the acute accent placed over the long vowels, and over the long sounds of those diphthongs, which may be sometimes short. This sign is not intended to mark the syllable on which the stress of the voice falls.

13. In simple words of two syllables the tonic accent is usually upon the first syllable, as agus (óg-us), *and*; Úna (oón-a), Una: but in derived words of two or more syllables the accented syllable varies in the different provinces.

In Munster the accent falls on the termination or second syllable; in Connaught it falls on the first syllable, or root; in Ulster the accent falls on the first syllable, as in Connaught, but the termination is unduly shortened. For instance, the word casán, a path, is pronounced kos-aún in Munster, kós-aun in Connaught, and kós-ăn in Ulster.

The Obscure Vowel Sounds.

Whenever a vowel has neither a tonic nor a written accent, it has so transient and indistinct a pronunciation that it is difficult to distinguish one broad or one slender vowel from another; hence in ancient writings we find vowels substituted for each other indiscriminately: *e.g.*, the word slánuiġṫe, saved, is frequently spelled slánaiġṫe, slánoiġṫe, slánuiġṫi.

14. Words distinguished by their accent.

áit, a place.	ait, funny, peculiar (what one likes or wishes).
ár, our; slaughter.	ar, on; says.

bás, death.

bas (*or* bos), palm of the hand.

cás, a case.

cas, turn.

céad (ceud), a hundred.

cead, leave, permission.

cóir, right.

coir, a crime.

cóiste, a coach.

coiste, a jury.

dó, two.

do, to.

fán, a wandering.

fan, wait, stay.

féar (feur), grass.

fear, a man.

fós, yet.

fos, a prop.

í, she, her.

i, in.

léar, clear, perceptible.

lear, the sea.

lón, food, provisions.

lon, a blackbird.

mála, a bag.

mala, an eyebrow.

méar (meur), a finger.

mear, quick, active.

mín, fine.

min, meal.

ná, than; not (*imperative*).

na, *the plural article*.

rós, a rose.

ros, flax-seed.

sál, a heel.

sal, filth, dirt.

séan (seun), happy.

sean, old.

sín, stretch.

sin, that.

sólás, comfort.

solas, light.

súl, (*gen. plural of* súil) eye.

sul, before (*with verbs*).

té, a person.

te, hot.

1. ↑ Since but few words, and these well-known, have eo short it is not usual to write the accent on eo long.
2. ↑ Also pronounced kosh-laun.
3. ↑ Pronounced like ille in the French word fille.
4. ↑ It cannot be properly represented by any English sound. It is somewhat like *oue* in the French word ouest.
5. ↑ Other sounds will be treated of under the heading "Aspiration."

Notes

CHAPTER II.

Aspiration.

15. The word "aspiration" comes from the Latin verb "aspirare," to breathe; hence, when we say in Irish that a consonant is aspirated, we mean that the breath is not completely stopped in the formation of the consonant, but rather that the consonant sound is continuous.

Take, for example, the consonant b. To form this consonant sound the lips are pressed closely together for an instant, and the breath is forced out on separating the lips. Now, if we wish to get the sound of b aspirated (or ḃ), we must breathe the whole time whilst trying to form the sound of b; *i.e.* we must not close the lips entirely, and the resulting sound is like the English consonant *v*. Hence we say that the sound of ḃ (in some positions) is *v*.

The Irish letter c corresponds very much to the English *k*, and the breathed sound of *k* corresponds to the sound of ċ (when broad). To sound the English *k*, we press the centre of the tongue against the palate, and cut off the breath completely for an instant. In pronouncing ċ (when broad), all we have to do is to try to pronounce the letter *k* without *pressing* the tongue against the palate. The word loċ, a lake, is pronounced somewhat like *luk*; but the tongue is not to touch the palate to form the *k*. The sound of ċ aspirated when slender (especially when initial) is very well represented by the sound of "h" in "humane."

The Irish *g* (g) has always the hard sound of *g* in the English word "go." In pronouncing this word we press the back of the tongue against the back of the

palate. Now, to pronounce ġ (and also ḋ) when broad, we must breathe in forming the sound of *g*, *i.e.* we must keep the tongue almost flat in the mouth.

The various sounds of the aspirated consonants are not given, as they are dealt with very fully in the second part of the "O'Growney Series." It may be well to remark, however, that the sound of ṗ is like the sound of the Irish f, not the English *f*. The Irish f is sounded without the aid of the teeth.

16. Aspiration is usually marked by placing a dot over the consonant aspirated thus—ḃ, ċ, ḋ. However, it is sometimes marked by an h after the consonant to be aspirated. This is the method usually adopted when Irish is written or printed in English characters.

17. In writing Irish only nine of the consonants, viz., b, c, d, f, g, m, p, s, and t, are aspirated; but in the spoken language all the consonants are aspirated.

The Aspiration of l, n, r.

18. The aspiration of the three letters l, n, r, is not marked by any sign in writing, as is the aspiration of the other consonants (ḃ or bh); but yet they are aspirated in the spoken language. An example will best illustrate this point. The student has already learned that the word leaḃar, a book, is pronounced lyou-ar. Mo, my, aspirates an ordinary consonant, as mo ḃó, my cow; but it also aspirates l, n, r, for mo leaḃar, my book, is pronounced mŭ low-ar (*i.e.* the sound of *y* after *l* disappears).

a leaḃar, his book, is pronounced ă low-ar.
a leaḃar, her book, " ă lyou-ar.
a leaḃar, their book, " ă lyow-ar.
a neart, his strength, " ă narth.
a neart, her strength, " ă nyarth.
&c., &c.

19. When l broad begins a word it has a much thicker sound than in English. In sounding the English l the point of the tongue touches the palate just above the teeth; but to get the thick sound of the Irish l we must press the tongue firmly against the upper teeth (or we may protrude it between the teeth). Now, when such an l is aspirated it loses this thick sound, and is pronounced just as the English *l*.

20. It is not easy to show by an example the aspirated sound of r; however, it is aspirated in the spoken language, and a slightly softer sound is produced.

Rules for Aspirations.

21. We give here only the principal rules. Others will be given as occasion will require.

(*a*). The **possessive adjectives** mo, my; do, thy; and a, his, aspirate the first consonant of the following word, as mo ḃó, my cow; do ṁáṫair, thy mother; a ċapall, his horse.

(*b*) **The article aspirates** a noun in the nominative and accusative feminine singular, and also in the genitive masculine singular unless the noun begins with d, t, or s; an bean, the woman; tá an feoil guirt, the meat is salt; mac an fir, (the) son of the man.

(*c*) In **compound words** the initial consonant of the second word is aspirated, except when the second word begins with d or t, and the first ends in one of the letters d, n, t, l, s. These five letters will be easily remembered, as they are the consonants of the word "*dentals*"; sean-mháthair, a grandmother; cáth-bárr, a helmet; leith-phinginn, a halfpenny; but sean-duine, an old person; sean-teach, an old house.

(*d*) The **interjection** a, the sign of the vocative case, causes aspiration in nouns of both genders and both numbers: a fhir, O man; a mhná, O women; a Sheumais, O James.

(*e*) **An adjective is aspirated** when it agrees with a feminine noun in the nominative or accusative singular, or with a masculine noun in the genitive singular, and in the dative and vocative singular of both genders; also in the nominative plural when the noun ends in a slender consonant: as bó bhán, a white cow; mac an fhir

ṁóir, (the) son of the big man; ó'n mnaoi ṁaiṫ, from the good woman; trí capaill ṁóra, three big horses.

(*f*) When a noun is immediately followed by an indefinite[1] noun in the genitive case, singular or plural, the initial of the noun in the genitive is usually subject to precisely the same rules as if it were the initial of an adjective: e.g. uḃ ċirce, a hen-egg (lit. an egg of a hen); uiḃe circe, of a hen-egg; cloċ ṁine, a stone of meal; min ċoirce, oaten meal. The letters d and t are not aspirated after d, n, t, l, s; and f is often excepted, as the change in sound is so great.

(*g*) The initial of a **verb is aspirated**—(1) in the imperfect, the simple past, and the conditional, active voice; (2) after the particles ní, not; má, if; mar, as; and sul, before; (3) after the simple relative particle, expressed or understood: ḃí sé, he was; do ṡeas sí, she stood; ní ḟuilim, I am not; ní ḃéiḋ sé, he will not be; an té ḃuaileas or an té a ḃuaileas, he (or the person) who strikes; do ḃuailfinn, I would strike.

(*h*) The initial of the word following ba or bud (the past tense and conditional of the verb is) is usually aspirated.[2]

> ba ṁaiṫ liom, I liked or I would like.
> b’ ḟearr leis, he preferred or would prefer.

(*i*) The **simple prepositions** (except ag, ar, le, gan, i, and go) aspirate the initials of the nouns immediately following them: fá ċloiċ, under a stone; ṫug sé an leaḃar do Ṡeumas, he gave the book to James.

1. ↑ *i.e.* One not preceded by the definite article, possessive adj., &c. See par. 585.
2. ↑ Except in N. Connaught and Ulster, where this rule applies only to b, p, m, and sometimes f.

Notes

CHAPTER III.

Eclipsis.

22. Eclipsis is the term used to denote the suppression of the sounds of certain Irish consonants by prefixing others produced by the same organ of speech.

There is usually a great similarity between the eclipsing letter and the letter eclipsed: thus, p is eclipsed by b; t is eclipsed by d, &c. If the student pronounce the letters p and b, t and d, he will immediately notice the similarity above referred to. Thus b and d are like p and t, except that they are pronounced with greater stress of the breath, or, more correctly, with greater vibration of the vocal chords.

23. Seven[1] of the consonants can be eclipsed, viz. b, c, d, f, g, p, t; the others cannot. Each consonant has its own eclipsing letter, and it can be eclipsed by no other. The eclipsing letter is written immediately before the eclipsed letter, and is sometimes, though not usually in recent times, separated from it by a hyphen, as m-bárd or mbárd (pronounced maurdh).

Formerly eclipsis was sometimes shown by doubling the eclipsed letter: thus, a ttarḃ, their bull. Whenever a letter is eclipsed both should be retained in writing, although only one of them (the eclipsing one) is sounded.

24. It is much better not to consider the letter s as an eclipsable letter at all. t replaces it in certain positions, but in none of those positions (dative singular excepted) in which the other letters are eclipsed. In fact, s is often replaced by t when the previous word ends in n, as an tsúil, the eye; aon tsál, one heel; sean t-Síle, old Sheelah; buiḋean tsluaġ, a crowd, &c. Some, however, maintain that s is really eclipsed in these cases, because its sound is suppressed, and that of another consonant substituted; but as the substitution of t follows the rules for aspiration rather than those for eclipsis, we prefer to class s with the non-eclipsable letters, l, m, n, r, s.

25. b is eclipsed by m.

c " g.

d " n.

f " ḃ.

g " n.

p " b.

t " d.

a mbárd (their poet) is pronounced a maurd.

a gcapall (their horse) " a gŏpàl.

ár ndán (our poem) " aur naun.

i ḃfuil (in blood) " ă vwil.

a ngiolla (their servant) " ang illŭ.

i bpéin (in pain) " a baen.

a dtalaṁ (their land) " a dhŏl-ŭv.

Although n is used as the eclipsing letter of g, the sound of n is not heard, but the simple consonant sound ng; therefore it would be more correct to say that g is eclipsed by ng.

26. (*a*) The **possessive adjectives plural**—ár, our; ḃur, your; and a, their—eclipse the initial consonant of the next word, as ár dtiġearna, our Lord; ḃur gcapall, your horse; a mbád, their boat.

(*b*) The **article eclipses** the initial consonant of the noun in the genitive plural (both genders): láṁa na ḃ-fear, (the) hands of the men.

(*c*) **A simple preposition followed by the article and a noun in the singular causes eclipsis**[2]: tá sé ar an gcapall, he is on the horse; ṫáinig sé leis an ḃfear, he came with the man.

(*d*) The **numeral adjectives** seaċt, oċt, naoi, and deiċ (7, 8, 9, and 10), and their compounds, as 27, 28, 29, &c., cause eclipsis: seaċt mba, seven cows; oċt gcaoiriġ, eight sheep; seaċt ḃ-fir fiċead, twenty-seven men.

(*e*) The initial consonant of a **verb is eclipsed** after the particles ċa, not; an, whether; cá, where; naċ, whether … not or that … not; go, that; muna, unless; dá, if; and

after the relative particle a when it is preceded by a preposition, or when it means “all that” or “what.” The relative preceded by a preposition does not eclipse if the verb be past tense, except in the case of a very few verbs, which will be given later on: an dtuigeann tú, do you understand? nać ḃfuil sé tinn, isn’t he sick? cá ḃfuil sé, where is it? duḃairt sé go dtiocfaḋ sé, he said that he would come; an fear ag a ḃfuil an leaḃar,[3] the man who has the book.

The Insertion of n.

27. (*a*) When a **word begins with a vowel**, the letter n is usually prefixed in all those cases in which a consonant would be eclipsed: *e.g.*, ár n-arán laeṫeaṁail, our daily bread; ċuaiḋ Oisín go tír na n-óg, Oisin went to "the land of the young."

The n is sometimes omitted when the previous word ends in n: as ar an aonaċ, or ar an n-aonaċ, at the fair.

(*b*) **Prepositions** (except do and de) **ending in a vowel** prefix n to the possessive adjectives a, his, her, or their;

and ár, our; le n-a ṁáṫair, with his mother; ó n-ár dtír, from our country.

The Insertion of t.

28. (*a*) The **article prefixes** t to a masculine noun beginning with a vowel in the nominative and accusative singular: as an t-aṫair, the father.

(*b*) If a **noun begins with s** followed by a vowel, or by l, n, or r, the s is replaced by t after the article in the nom. and acc. feminine sing. and the genitive masculine, and sometimes in the dative singular of both genders, as an tsúil, the eye; teaċ an tsagairt, (the) house of the priest, *i.e.;* the priest's house; tá siad ag teaċt ó'n tseilg, they are coming from the hunt.

(*c*) This replacing of s by t occurs after the words aon, one; sean, old; and other words ending in n, as aon tsealg aṁáin, one hunt.

The Insertion of h.

29. The following is a pretty general rule for the insertion of h before vowels:—

"**Particles which neither aspirate nor eclipse, and which end in a vowel**, prefix h to words beginning with a vowel. Such is the case with the following:—le, with; a, her; go, to; dara, second; sé, six; trí, three; na, the (in the nom., acc., and dative plural, also in the gen. singular feminine); go before adverbs; the ordinal adjectives ending in ṁad, &c."—*Gaelic Journal*.

1. ↑ Eight is the number given in other grammars. They include the letter S.
2. ↑ In many places they prefer to aspirate in this case.
3. ↑ In colloquial Irish this sentence would be, An fear a ḃ-fuil an leaḃar aige, or An fear go ḃ-fuil an leaḃar aige.

Notes

CHAPTER IV.

Attenuation and Broadening.

30. *Attenuation* is the process of making a broad consonant slender. This is usually done by placing an i immediately before the *broad* consonant, or an e after it. Thus if we want to make the r of mór (big), slender, we place an i before the r; thus móir. If we wish to make the f of fad (the termination of the 1st person singular future) slender, we write fead &c.

31. *Broadening* is the process of making a slender consonant broad. This is often done by placing a u immediately before the slender consonant, or an a after it; thus the verbal noun of derived verbs ending in iġ is formed by adding aḋ: before adding the aḋ the ġ must be made broad; this is done by inserting a *u*; míniġ, explain; míniuġaḋ, explanation. If we want to make the f of fiḋ (the termination of 3rd singular future) broad, we must write faiḋ. Buailfiḋ sé, he will strike; meallfaiḋ sé, he will deceive.

Whenever a slender consonant is preceded by an i which forms part of a diphthong or a triphthong, the consonant is usually made broad by dropping the i. Thus to broaden the l in buail, or the n in goin, we drop the i and the we get bual and gon. The verbal nouns of buail and goin are bualaḋ and gonaḋ.

CHAPTER V.

Caol le caol agus leaṫan le leaṫan;

or,

Slender with slender and broad with broad.

32. When a single consonant, or two consonants which easily blend together, come between two vowels, both the vowels must be slender or both must be broad.

This is a general rule of Irish phonetics. It has already been stated that a consonant is broad when beside a broad vowel, and slender when beside a slender vowel; and also that the sounds of the consonants vary according as they are broad or slender: hence if we try to pronounce a word like fearín, the r, being beside the slender vowel i, should get its slender sound; but being also beside the broad vowel a, the r should be broad. But a consonant cannot be slender and broad at the same time; hence, such spelling as fearín, málín, and éanín, does not represent the correct sounds of the words, and, therefore, the device adopted in writing Irish is to have both the vowels slender or both broad; *e.g.*, firín, máilín, éinín.

This law of phonetics is not a mere *spelling* rule. If it were, such spelling as fearaoin, málaoin, éanaoin, would be correct. But no such spelling is used, because it does not represent the sounds of the words. The *ear* and not the *eye* must be the guide in the observance of the rule "caol le caol 7 leaṫan le leaṫan."

Two consonants may come together, one naturally broad and the other naturally slender. When this happens, Irish speakers, as a general rule, give the consonants their *natural* sounds, i.e., they keep the broad consonant broad, and the slender one slender. For instance, the ṁ of coṁ is naturally broad, and the l of líon is naturally slender. In the word coṁlíon (*fulfil*), the first syllable is always pronounced broad, although the word is usually written coiṁlíon. This is an instance of the abuse of the rule caol le caol. There are many words in which a single consonant may have a slender vowel at one side, and a broad vowel at the other; *e.g.*, aréir (*last night*), aníos (*up*), ariaṁ (*ever*), arís (*again*), etc.

Although the rule caol le caol had been much abused in modern spelling, in deference to modern usage we have retained the ordinary spelling of the words.

CHAPTER VI.

Syncope.

33. Whenever, in a word of two or more syllables an unaccented vowel or digraph occurs in the last syllable between a liquid (l, m, n, r) and any other consonant, or between two liquids, the unaccented vowel or digraph is elided whenever the word is lengthened by a grammatical inflection beginning with a vowel. This elision of one or more unaccented vowels from the body of an Irish word is called *syncope*; and when the vowels have been elided the word is said to be *syncopated*.

34. The only difficulty in syncope is that it often involves slight changes in the other vowels of the syncopated word, in accordance with the rule caol le caol,

35. The following examples will fully exemplify the method of syncopating words.

(a) *Nouns.*

The genitive singular of—

maidin (morning)	is		maidne	not	maidine
obair (work}	"		oibre	"	obaire
carraig (a rock)	"		cairrge	"	carraige
pinginn } (a penny)	"		pingne	"	pinginne
piġinn } (a penny)	"		piġne	"	piġinne
caḃair (help)	"		caḃra	"	caḃara
caṫair (a city)	"		caṫraċ	"	caṫaraċ
lasair (a flame)	"		lasraċ	"	lasaraċ
olann (wool)	"		olna	"	olanna
buiḋean (a company)	"		buiḋne	"	buiḋine
bruiġean (a palace) [W 1]	"		bruiġne	"	bruiġine

(b) *Adjectives*.

The genitive singular feminine of—

saiḋbir (rich)	is	saiḋbre	not	saiḋbire
flaiṫeaṁail (princely)	"	flaiṫeaṁla	"	flaiṫeaṁala
áluinn (beautiful)	"	áilne	"	áluinne
aoiḃinn (pleasant)	"	aoiḃne	"	aoiḃinne
uasal (noble)	"	uaisle	"	uasaile

(c) *Verbs*.

Root.	Pres. Indicative.		
codail	codlaim, I sleep,	not	codailim.
siuḃail	siuḃlaim, I walk,	"	siuḃailim.
innis	innsim, I tell,	"	innisim.
abair	abraim, I say,	"	abairim.
laḃair	laḃraim, I speak,	"	laḃairim.

The same contraction takes place in these and like verbs in all the finite tenses except the future and conditional (*old* forms). See par. 298.

A thorough knowledge of when and how Syncope takes place will obviate many difficulties.

Cite error: `<ref>` tags exist for a group named "W", but no

corresponding <references group="W"/> tag was found

Wikisource notes

Cite error: <ref> tags exist for a group named "W", but no corresponding <references group="W"/> tag was found

PART II.—ETYMOLOGY.

36. There are nine parts of speech in Irish corresponding exactly to those in English.

CHAPTER I.

The Article.

37. In Irish there is only one article, an, which corresponds to the English definite article, "the."

There is no indefinite article, so that capall means either "horse" or "a horse."

38. In all cases of the singular number the article has the form an, except in the genitive feminine, when it becomes na.

39. The article an had formerly an initial s. This s reappears after the following prepositions, i, in, or ann, in; go, to; le, with; tré, through. Although this s really belongs to the article, still it is usually written as part of the preposition; as ins an leabar, in the book; leis an bfear, with the man.

Singular.

40. (*a*) If a noun begins with an aspirable consonant (except d, t, and s),[1] it is apirated by the article in the nominative and accusative feminine and in the genitive masculine, as an ḃó, the cow; an ḃean, the woman; mac an ḟir, (the) son of the man; ceann an ċapaill, the horse's head (or the head of the horse).

(*b*) If a noun begins with s followed by a vowel, or by l, n, r, the s is replaced by t, in the nominative and accusative feminine and genitive masculine, and sometimes in the dative of both genders: an tsál, the heel; an tsúil, the eye; teaċ an tsagairt, the house of the priest; mac an tsaoir, the son of the artizan; do'n tsagart, to the priest; ar an tsléiḃ, on the mountain.

Strictly speaking, it is only in the dat. fem. that the s is replaced by t, but custom permits it in the masculine.

(*c*) If a noun begins with a vowel, the article prefixes t the nominative and accusative masculine, and h to the genitive

feminine, as an t-aṫair, the father; an t-uisge, the water; an t-eun, the bird; an t-uan, the lamb; bárr na h-uiḃe, the top of the egg; fuaċt na h-aimsire, the coldness of the weather.

(*d*) When the noun begins with an eclipsable consonant (except d and t, the article generally eclipses when it is preceded by a preposition, as ar an gcnoc, on the hill; ó'n ḃfear, from the man. After the prepositions[2] do and de aspiration takes place, not eclipsis, as ṫug sé an t-airgead do'n ḟear, he gave the money to the man; cuid de'n ḟeur, some of the grass.

(*e*) No change is produced by the article in the singular if the noun begins with d, n, t, l, s (followed by a mute), or r. In *Munster* d and t are often eclipsed in the dative.

Plural.

(*f*) If a noun begins with an eclipsable consonant the article eclipses it in the genitive plural, as a ḃean na dtrí mbó, O woman of (the) three cows; Sliaḃ na mban, "the mountain of the women."

(*g*) If the noun begins with a vowel the article prefixes n to the genitive plural and h to the nom., the acc., and dative plural, as luaċ na n-uḃ, the price of the eggs; na h-asail, the asses; ó na h-áitiḃ seo, from these places.

(*h*) The letter s is never replaced by t in the plural number under the influence of the article.

1. ↑ The letters d, t, and s are aspirable in the singular, but not usually by the article.
2. ↑ For the effects of gan and the article, see Syntax, par. 606 (*b*).

Notes

CHAPTER II.

The Noun.

I. GENDER.

41. There are only two genders in Irish, the masculine and the feminine.

The gender of most Irish nouns may be learned by the application of a few general rules.

MASCULINE NOUNS.

42. (*a*) Names of males are masculine: as fear, a man; flaiṫ, a prince; aṫair, a father; coileaċ, a cock.

(*b*) The names of occupations, offices, &c., peculiar to men, are masculine: as ollaṁ, a doctor; file, a poet; bárd, a bard; breiṫeaṁ, a judge; saiġidiúir, a soldier.

(*c*) Personal agents ending in óir, aire, uiḋe (or aiḋe, oiḋe), or aċ are masculine: as sgeuluiḋe, a story-teller; bádóir, a boatman.

(*d*) Diminutives ending in án, and all abstract nouns ending in as or eas, are masculine—*e.g.*:

árdán, a hillock. maiṫeas, goodness.

(*e*) The diminutives ending in ín are usually said to be of the same gender as the noun from which they are derived. Notwithstanding this rule they seem to be all masculine. Cailín, a girl, is masculine,[1] i.e. it suffers the same initial changes as a masculine noun, *but the pronoun referring to it is feminine*. She is a fine girl, Is breáġ an cailín í (not é).

(*f*) Many nouns which end in a consonant or two consonants preceded by a broad vowel are masculine: as ball, a limb; luaċ, a price; crann, a tree &c.

Exceptions:—(1) All words of two or more syllables ending in aċt or óg.

(2) A large number of nouns ending in a broad consonant are feminine. A very full list of commonly used feminine nouns ending in a broad consonant will be found in Appendix II.

FEMININE NOUNS.

43. (*a*) Names of females and designations of females are feminine: bean, a woman; cearc, a hen; máṫair, a mother; inġean, a daughter.

(*b*) The names of countries and rivers are feminine: as Éire, Ireland; an Life, the Liffey; an Ḃearḃa, the Barrow.

(*c*) Words of two or more syllables ending in aċt or in óg are feminine: as fuiseóg, a lark; driseóg, a briar; milseaċt, sweetness; leaṁnaċt, new-milk.

(*d*) All abstract nouns formed from the genitive singular feminine of adjectives are feminine: as áirde, height—from árd, high; áilne, beauty —from áluinn, beautiful; daille, blindness—from dall, blind.

(*e*) Nouns ending in a consonant or two consonants preceded by a slender vowel, are feminine: as tír, country; onóir, honour; uair, an hour; súil, an eye.

Exceptions:—(1) Personal nouns ending in óir. (2) Diminutives in ín. (3) Names of males, as aṫair, a father; buaċaill, a boy. (4) Also the following

nouns:—buaid, a victory; druim, the back; ainm,[2] a name; greim, a piece; geit, a fright, a start; and foclóir, dictionary, vocabulary.

II. CASE.

44. In Irish there are five cases—the Nominative, Accusative, Genitive, Dative, and Vocative.

The Nominative case in Irish corresponds to the English nominative when the subject of a verb.

The Accusative corresponds to the English objective case when governed by a transitive verb. The accusative case of every noun in modern Irish has the same form as the nominative, and suffers the same initial changes as regards aspiration and eclipsis.

The Genitive case corresponds to the English possessive case. English nouns in the possessive case or in the objective case, preceded by the preposition "of," are usually translated into Irish by the genitive case.

The Dative case is the case governed by prepositions.

The Vocative corresponds to the English nominative of address. It is always used in addressing a person or persons. It is preceded by the sign a, although "O" may not appear before the English word; but this a is not usually pronounced before a vowel or fh.

RULES FOR THE FORMATION OF THE CASES.

N.B.—These rules apply to all the declensions.

45. The **Nominative case singular** is always the simple form of the noun.

46. The **Dative case singular** is the same as the nominative singular, except (1) in the 2nd declension, when the noun ends in a broad consonant; (2) in most of the nouns of the 5th declension.

47. The **Vocative case singular** is always the same as the nominative singular, except in the 1st declension, in which it is like the genitive singular.

48. Whenever the nominative plural is formed by the addition of te, ta, anna, aċa, í or iḋe, &c., it is called a **strong nominative plural**. Strong plurals are usually found with nouns whose nominative singular ends in a liquid.

Those ending in l or n generally take ta or te.
„ m or s „ anna.
„ r „ aċa.

The Genitive Plural.

49. (1) The genitive plural in the 1st, 2nd, and 3rd declensions is like the nominative singular, except strong plurals, and a few nouns which drop the i of the nominative singular, as súil, an eye, gen. pl. súl.

(2) In the 4th declension, and in the case of nearly all strong plurals, the genitive plural is like the nominative plural.

(3) In the 5th declension the genitive plural is like the genitive singular.

50.

The Dative Plural.

(1) When the nominative plural ends in a or a consonant, the dative plural ends in aiḃ.

(2) When the nominative plural ends in e, the dative plural is formed by changing the e into iḃ.

(3) When the nominative plural ends in ́ı, the dative plural is formed by adding ḃ.

The termination of the dative plural is not always used in the spoken language.

Vocative Plural.

51. (1) When the dative plural ends in aiḃ, the vocative plural is formed by dropping the iḃ of the dative.

(2) In all other cases it is like the nominative plural.

III. The Declensions.

52. The number of declensions is not quite settled: it is very much a matter of convenience. Five is the number usually reckoned.

The declensions are known by the inflection of the genitive singular.

THE FIRST DECLENSION.

53. All the nouns of the first declension are masculine, and end in a broad consonant.

All masculine nouns ending in a broad consonant *are not* of the first declension.

54. The genitive singular is formed by attenuating the nominative. In most nouns of the 1st declension this is done by simply placing an i after the last broad vowel of the nominative.

Example.

55. maor, a steward.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	maor	maoir
Gen.	maoir	maor
Dat.	maor	maoraiḃ
Voc.	a ṁaoir	a ṁaora

56. In words of more than one syllable, if the nominative ends in aċ or eaċ, the genitive singular is formed by changing aċ or eaċ into aiġ or iġ respectively. With a few exceptions, the nominative plural of these nouns is like the genitive singular. The other cases are quite regular.

In monosyllables ċ is not changed into ġ; as bruaċ, a brink, gen. bruaiċ.

N.B.—In all declensions in words of more than one syllable aċ and eaċ, when attenuated, become aiġ and iġ; and aiġ and iġ when made broad become aċ and eaċ. See dat. pl. of marcaċ and coileaċ.

Examples.

57. marcaċ, a horseman.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	marcaċ	marcaiġ
Gen.	marcaiġ	marcaċ
Dat.	marcaċ	marcaċaiḃ
Voc.	a ṁarcaiġ	a ṁarcaċa

N.B.—The majority of nouns in aċ belonging to this declension are declined like marcaċ.

58. ualaċ, a load, burden.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	ualaċ	ualaiġe
Gen.	ualaiġ	ualaċ
Dat.	ualaċ	ualaiġiḃ
Voc.	a ualaiġ	a ualaiġe

mullaċ, a summit; eudaċ, cloth; bealaċ, a path, a way; órlaċ, an inch; and aonaċ, a fair, are declined like ualaċ. Aonaċ has nom. pl. aonaiġe or aontaiġe.

59. coileaċ, a cock.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	coileaċ	coiliġ
Gen.	coiliġ	coileaċ
Dat.	coileaċ	coileaċaiḃ
Voc.	a ċoiliġ	a ċoileaċa

60. Besides the above simple method of forming the genitive singular of most nouns of this declension, there are also the following modifications of the vowels of the nominative singular:—

Change	eu or éa	in nom. sing.		into éi	in gen. sing.
„	ia	„		„ éi	„
„	o (short)	„		„ ui	„
io or ea		„	usually	„ i	„

All the other cases of these nouns are formed in accordance with the rules given above.

Examples of Vowel-changes in Genitive Singular.

61. eun, a bird.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	eun	éin
Gen.	éin	eun
Dat.	eun	eunaiḃ
Voc.	a éin	a euna

62. Fear, a man.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	fear	fir
Gen.	fir	fear
Dat.	fear	fearaiḃ
Voc.	a ḟir	a ḟeara

N.B.—The gen. of oileán in island is oileáin; of féar, grass, féir; and of fear, a man, fir.

63. Cnoc, a hill.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cnoc	cnuic
Gen.	cnuic	cnoc
Dat.	cnoc	cnocaiḃ
Voc.	a ċnuic	a ċnoca

64. The following nouns change ea into ei in genitive singular:—leanḃ, a child; neart, strength; cneas, skin; and ceart, right, justice. (Cnis and cirt are sometimes found as the genitives of cneas and ceart).

Irregular Genitive Singular.

mac, a son	has	genitive	mic
biaḋ, food,	„	„	bíḋ
rian, a track,	„	„	riain
srian, a bridle,	„	„	sriain
Brian, Bernard, Brian		„	Briain

Neaċ, a person; and éinne, aonne (or aonneaċ), anybody, are indeclinable.

65. Some nouns of this declension form their nominative plural by adding e.

NOUN.	GENITIVE SING.	NOM. PLURAL.
aonaċ, a fair	aonaiġ	{ aontaiġe / aonaiġe
doras, a door	dorais	doirse
éigeas, a learned man	éigis	éigse
aingeal, an angel	aingil	aingle
bóṫar, a road	bóṫair	bóiṫre
madraḋ or (madaḋ), a dog	madraiḋ	madraiḋe
slaḃraḋ, a chain	slaḃraiḋ	slaḃraiḋe
margaḋ, a market	margaiḋ	margaiḋe

66. The following nouns take a in nominative plural:—peann, a pen; seod, a jewel; slán, a surety; cneas, skin; meacan, a carrot or parsnip[W 1]; deor, a tear; caor, a berry[W 2]; smeur, a blackberry; uḃall, an apple (pl. uḃla); focal (pl. focail or focla); fiaċ,[3] a debt (fiaċ, pl. féiċ or féiġ, a raven); sgeul, news; and bruaċ, a brink.

67. The following take ta, in nom. pl.:—seol, a sail; ceol, music; neul, a cloud; sgeul, a story; cogaḋ, war (pl. cogṫa[4]); cuan, a harbour; dún, a fort (pl. dúnta and dúna); ceud, a hundred[5]; líon, a net; ceap, a trunk of a tree (pl. ceapṫa[W 3]); múr (pl. múrṫa), a wall.

68. Other nominative plurals—clár, a board, a table, makes cláir or cláraċa; tobar, a well, makes tobair or tobraċa, tobaireaċa or toibreaċa; sluaġ, a crowd, makes sluaiġte.

69. Many nouns of this declension have two or more forms in the nominative plural. The regular plural is the better one, though the others are also used. The following are a few examples of such nouns:—fear, a man (pl. fir, feara; mac, a son (pl. mic, maca); leaḃar, a book leaḃair, leaḃra; arm, an army (pl. airm, arma); capall, a horse (pl. capaill, caiple).

70. The termination -raḋ has a collective, not a plural force; just like *ry* in the English words *cavalry*, *infantry*, etc. This termination was formerly *neuter*, but now it is masculine or feminine; the genitive masculine being -raiḋ, the genitive feminine -raiḋe. Hence laoċraḋ, *a band of warriors*, macraḋ, *a company of youths*, eaċraḋ, *a number of steeds* (*cavalry*), are not really plurals of laoċ, mac, and eaċ, but collective nouns formed from them. Likewise éanlaiṫ, (spoken form, éanlaiṫe) is a collective noun meaning *a flock of birds*, or *birds in general*, and it is not

really the plural of éan. However, laoċraḋ and éanlaiṫ are now used as plurals.

Appendix I. gives a list of nouns belonging to this declension.

THE SECOND DECLENSION.

71. All nouns of the 2nd declension are feminine.[6] They all end in consonants, but the consonants may be either broad or slender.

72. The **genitive singular** is formed by adding e, (if the last vowel of the nominative be broad it must be attenuated); and if the last consonant be ċ it is changed into ġ in the genitive (except in words of one syllable).

73. The **dative singular** is got by dropping the final e of the genitive.

74. The **nominative plural** is formed by adding a or e (a, if final consonant be broad) to the nom. sing.

Examples.

75. lil, a lily.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	lil	lile
Gen.	lile	lil
Dat.	lil	liliḃ
Voc.	a lil	a lile

76. cos, a foot[7] or a leg.

Nom. & Acc.	cos	cosa
Gen.	coise	cos
Dat.	cois	cosaiḃ
Voc.	a ċos	a ċosa

77. cailleaċ, a hag.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cailleaċ	cailleaċa
Gen.	cailliġe	cailleaċ
Dat.	cailliġ	cailleaċaiḃ
Voc.	a ċailleaċ	a ċailleaċa

78. Like nouns of 1st declension, the vowels of the nom. sing. are sometimes changed when the final consonant is attenuated in the genitive singular.

The following are the chief changes:—

Change io in the nom. sing. into i in the gen. sing.
„ eu „ „ éi „
„ ia „ „ éi „
„ o (short) sometimes „ ui „

In words of one syllable change ea into ei (but cearc, a hen, becomes circe); in words of more than one syllable change ea into i.

79. beaċ, a bee.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	beaċ	beaċa
Gen.	beiċe	beaċ
Dat.	beiċ	beaċaiḃ
Voc.	a ḃeaċ	a ḃeaċa

80. geug, a branch.

Nom. & Acc.	geug	geuga
Gen.	géige	geug
Dat.	géig	geugaiḃ
Voc.	a ġeug	a ġeuga

81. grian, a sun.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	grian	griana, grianta
Gen.	gréine	grian
Dat.	gréin	grianaiḃ
Voc.	a ġrian	a ġriana

82. long, a ship.

Nom. & Acc.	long	longa
Gen.	luinge	long
Dat.	luing	longaiḃ
Voc.	a long	a longa

83. freuṁ,[8] a root.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	freuṁ	freuṁa (or freuṁaċa)
Gen.	fréiṁe	freuṁ (freuṁaċa)
Dat.	fréiṁ	freuṁaiḃ (freuṁaċaiḃ)
Voc.	a ḟreuṁ	a ḟreuṁa (a ḟreuṁaċa)

84. áit, a place.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	áit	áite, áiteanna or áiteaċa
Gen.	áite	áit, áiteanna „ áiteaċa
Dat.	áit	áitiḃ, áiteannaiḃ, áiteaċaiḃ
Voc.	a áit	a áite, áiteanna, áiteaċa

The above are two examples of nouns with strong nominative plural (see par. 48).

85. In forming the genitive, nouns are sometimes syncopated, as buiḋean, a company, gen. buiḋne (see pars. 33, 35); bruiḋean, a palace, gen.

sing. bruiḋne.[9]

86. **Irregular Genitives Singular.**

clann, a clan, children,	makes {	cloinne, clainne,	pl.	clanna
deoċ, a drink,	„	diġe,	„	deoċa
sgian, a knife,	„	sgine,	„	sgeana
briaṫar, a (solemn) word,	„	bréiṫre,	„	briaṫra
bláṫaċ, buttermilk,	„	bláiṫċe[10]		
laṫaċ, mud, mire,	„	laiṫċe[11]		
daḃaċ, a vat,	„	daiḃċe	„	daḃaċa
aġaiḋ, a face,	„	aiġṫe	„	aiġṫe

87. Many nouns of this declension form their nominative plural in anna or aċa. The final a of these terminations *may* be dropped in the genitive plural.

NOM. SING.	NOM. PL.
cúis, a cause	cúiseanna
luiḃ, an herb	luiḃeanna
deil, a lathe	deileanna
gluais, a contrivance	gluaiseanna
béim, a stroke	béimeanna
duais, a prize, reward	duaiseanna
léim, a leap	léimeanna
réim, a course, a voyage	réimeanna
áit, a place	áite, áiteanna, áiteaċa
luċ, a mouse	luċa, luċanna
sgoil, a school	sgoileanna (sgolta), sgoilteaċa[W 4]
céim, a step	céimeanna
fuaim, a sound	fuamanna
uair, an hour, time	uaire, uaireanna, uaireannta
sráid, a street	sráide, sráideanna, sráideaċa
páirc, a field	páirce, páirceanna
feis, a festival	feiseanna

88. Nouns that take aċa in nominative plural—

obair, a work	oibreaċa
óráid, an oration	óráideaċa
slat, a rod	slata, slataċa
litir, a letter	litre, litreaċa
uḃ, an egg	uiḃe, uiḃeaċa
paidir, a prayer	paidreaċa
aicíd, a disease	aicídeaċa, aicídí
ciúṁais, an edge	ciúṁaiseaċa
coicṫiḋis, a fortnight	coicṫiḋiseaċa, coicṫiḋisí
truaill, a sheathe, a scabbard	truailleaċa
leac, a flag, a flat stone	leaca, leacaċa, leacraċa

89. The following take te, ṫe, or ṫa in the nominative plural; aḋ may be added in the genitive plural:—coill[12], a wood; túir[W 5], a pillar, a prop; tír, a country (pl. tíorṫa; aġaiḋ, face (pl. aiġṫe; speur, a sky, speurṫa.

90. Sometimes when the last vowel of the nominative singular is i preceded by a broad vowel, the genitive plural is formed by dropping the i, as súil, an eye, gen. pl. súl; fuaim, a sound, gen. pl. fuam, &c.

For a list of nouns ending in a broad consonant belonging to this declension, see Appendix II.

THIRD DECLENSION.

91. The 3rd declension includes (1) personal nouns ending in óir (all masculine), (2) derived nouns in aċt or aċd (feminine), (3) other nouns

ending in consonants which are, as a rule, masculine or feminine according as they end in broad or slender consonants.

92. The **genitive singular** is formed by adding a. If the last vowel of the nominative be i preceded by a broad vowel, the i is usually dropped in the gen., as toil, a will, gen. tola.

93. The **nominative plural** is usually the same as the genitive singular; but personal nouns ending in óir add í or iḋe to the nominative singular.

94. Most of the derived nouns in aċt, being abstract in meaning, do not admit of a plural. Mallaċt, a curse, and a few others have plurals. Fuaċt, cold, although an abstract noun in aċt, is masculine.

95. The vowels of the nominative often undergo a change in the formation of the genitive singular. These changes are just the reverse of the vowel changes of the 1st and 2nd declensions (see pars. 60 and 78).

Change ei, i or io (short) in nom. into ea in the genitive

„ u „ ui „ „ o „

„ éi „ éa „

Examples.

96. cnáṁ,[13] a bone.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cnáṁ	cnáṁa
Gen.	cnáṁa	cnáṁ
Dat.	cnáṁ	cnáṁaiḃ
Voc.	a ċnáṁ	a ċnáṁa

97.	fíon, wine.	
Nom. & Acc.	fíon	fíona, fíonta
Gen.	fíona	fíon
Dat.	fíon	fíonaiḃ
Voc.	a ḟíon	a ḟíona

98.	crios, a belt, a girdle.	
Nom. & Acc.	crios	creasa
Gen.	creasa	crios
Dat.	crios	creasaiḃ
Voc.	a ċrios	a ċreasa

99.	feoil, flesh, meat.	
Nom. & Acc.	feoil	feola
Gen.	feola	feoil
Dat.	feoil	feolaiḃ
Voc.	a ḟeoil	a ḟeola

100. bádóir, a boatman.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	bádóir	bádóirí (bádóiriḋe)
Gen.	bádóra	bádóir, bádóirí
Dat.	bádóir	bádóiríḃ (bádóiriḋiḃ)
Voc.	a ḃádóir	a ḃádóirí (a ḃádóiriḋe)

101. druim, masc., the back.

Nom. & Acc.	druim	dromanna
Gen.	droma	dromanna
Dat.	druim	dromannaiḃ
Voc.	a ḋruim	a ḋromanna

102. greim, masc., a morsel, grip.

Nom. & Acc.	greim	greamanna
Gen.	greama	greamanna
Dat.	greim	greamannaiḃ
Voc.	a ġreim	a ġreamanna

103. Some nouns of this declension, ending in l or n, form their nominative pl. by adding ta or te to the nom. sing. These may add aḋ to form gen. pl., as—

móin,[14] a bog,	nom. pl.	móinte
táin, a drive,	"	táinte
bliaḋain, a year,	"	bliaḋanta[15]

104. Some nouns of this declension form their nom. plural by adding nna to the gen. singular. These may drop the final a in the gen. plural:—

	NOM. PLURAL.		
am, time	amannta	or	amanna
sruṫ, a stream	sroṫa	„	sroṫanna
druim, m., a back			dromanna
guṫ, a voice	goṫa	„	goṫanna
greim, m., a morsel			greamanna
ciṫ, or ciot, a shower	ceaṫa	„	ceaṫanna
cleas, a trick	cleasa	„	cleasanna
anam, a soul	anma	„	anmanna
daṫ, a colour	daṫa	„	daṫanna
ainm, a name	ainmne, ainmneaċa, anmanna		
maiḋm, a defeat	maḋma, maḋmanna		

105.

Other Nominatives Plural.

gníoṁ, a deed an act	makes	gníoṁarṫa[16]
connraḋ, a compact, covenant	„	connarṫa
cáin[17], a tax	„	cánaċa
buaċaill, a boy	„	buaċaillí
cliaṁain, a son-in-law	„	cliaṁnaċa
leabaḋ,[18] f., a bed	„	leabṫa, leapṫaċa, leapṫa
cuid, a share, a portion	„	codċa, codana

For a list of nouns belonging to this declension, see Appendix III.

THE FOURTH DECLENSION.

106. The 4th declension includes (1) personal nouns in aire, aiḋe, uiḋe, aiġe (sometimes spelled aiḋ, uiḋ, aiġ), which are all masculine; (2) diminutives in ín (said to be all masculine); (3) abstract derivatives formed from the gen. sing. feminine of adjectives (all feminine), as gile, brightness, from geal; féile, generosity, from fial; áilne, beauty, from áluinn, &c.; (4) all nouns ending in vowels, and which do not belong to the 5th declension. To assist the student a list of the most important nouns of the 5th declension is given in the Appendix IV.

107. This declension differs from all others in having **all the cases of the singular exactly alike**.

108. The **nominative plural** is usually formed by adding í, iḋe or aḋa.

109. The **genitive plural** is like the nom. pl., but eaḋ is frequently added in other grammars. There is no necessity whatever for this, because both cases are pronounced alike.

110. Nouns of more than one syllable ending in a form their nom. plural in aiḋe, or aí, as mála, a bag, pl. málaiḋe, or málaí; cóta, a coat, pl. cótaiḋe, or cótaí.

111. cailín, masc., a girl.

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
Nom. & Acc.	cailín	cailíní	or (cailíniḋe)	
Gen.	cailín	cailíní (cailín)	„ (cailíniḋe)	
Dat.	cailín	cailíniḃ	„ (cailíniḋiḃ)	
Voc.	a ċailín	a ċailíní	„ (a ċailíniḋe)	

112. tiġearna a lord.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	tiġearna	tiġearnaí (-aiḋe)
Gen.	tiġearna	tiġearnaí (-aiḋe)
Dat.	tiġearna	tiġearnaiḃ (-aiḋiḃ)
Voc.	a ṫiġearna	a ṫiġearnaí (-aiḋe)

113. The following nouns take te immediately after the last consonant to form the nominative plural:—

baile, a town	plural	bailte or bailteaċa
sloinne, a surname	„	sloinnte
múille, a mule	„	múillte
míle, a thousand, a mile	„	mílte[19]
léine, a shirt	„	léinte,
teine,[20] a fire	„	teinte, teinteaċa
cúinne, a corner	„	cúinnte, cúinní

114. The following nouns add ṫe in nominative plural, viz., all nouns in ḋe or ġe—e.g. croiḋe, a heart, pl. croiḋṫe; also caoi, a way, a method; daoi, a fool; saoi, a wise man; draoi, a druid; dlaoi, a curl.

Gnó, a work (pl. gnóṫa),[21] níḋ, or ní a thing (pl. neiṫe);

duine, a person,	makes	daoine in nom. pl.
uinge, an ounce,	„	uingeaċa „
easna, a rib,	„	easnaċa „

115. A few proper nouns, although not ending in a vowel or ín, belong to this declension, and do not change their form in any of their cases, viz.:—Pádraig, Patrick; Gearóid, Gerald; Muiris, Maurice; Caṫaoir, Cahir.

The word luċt, a people, does not change in gen.

THE FIFTH DECLENSION.

116. Most of the nouns belonging to this declension end in a vowel, and are, with a few exceptions, feminine.

117. The **genitive singular** is formed by adding a *broad consonant*.

This consonant varies in different nouns, but is usually n, nn, sometimes d, ḋ, or ċ. When the nominative singular ends in a consonant, a or ea comes between that consonant and the consonant added.

118. The **dative singular** is formed by attenuating the genitive. In the case of those nouns which form the genitive by adding ċ, the dative singular is usually like the nominative.

119. The **nominative plural**, as a general rule, is formed by adding a to the genitive singular. A few form their nominative plural by adding e to the gen. sing. This is accompanied with syncope, as in cáirde, friends; náiṁde, enemies; gaiḃne, smiths; and aiḃne, rivers, which are the plurals of cara, náṁa, gaḃa, and aḃ, or aḃa.

Some others form the nominative plural by attenuating the genitive singular, as in laċain, ducks; coin, hounds; fiċid, twenty; caoirigˊ, sheep; coṁursain, neighbours.

The **genitive plural** is exactly like the genitive singular.

Examples.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
120.	pearsa, fem., a person.	
Nom. & Acc.	pearsa	pearsana
Gen.	pearsan	pearsan
Dat.	pearsain	pearsanaiḃ
Voc.	a ṗearsa	a ṗearsana

121.	cara, fem.[W 6], a friend.	
Nom. & Acc.	cara	cáirde
Gen.	carad	carad
Dat.	caraid	cáirdiḃ
Voc.	a ċara	a ċáirde

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
122.	gaḃa, masc., a smith.	
Nom. & Acc.	gaḃa	gaiḃne
Gen.	gaḃann	gaḃann
Dat.	gaḃainn	gaiḃniḃ
Voc.	a ġaḃa	a ġaiḃne

123. laċa, fem., a duck.

Nom. & Acc.	laċa	laċain
Gen.	laċan	laċan
Dat.	laċain	laċanaiḃ
Voc.	a laċa	a laċana

124. cuisle, fem., a vein.

Nom. & Acc.	cuisle	cuisleanna
Gen.	cuisleann	cuisleann
Dat.	cuislinn	cuisleannaiḃ
Voc.	a ċuisle	a ċuisleanna

125. caora, fem., a sheep.

Nom. & Acc.	caora	caoiriġ
Gen.	caoraċ	caoraċ
Dat.	caoraiġ	caorċaiḃ, caoraċaiḃ
Voc.	a ċaora	a ċaorċa or a ċaoraċa

126. cat͘aoir, fem., a chair.

Nom. & Acc.	cat͘aoir	cat͘aoireaċa
Gen.	cat͘aoireaċ	cat͘aoireaċ
Dat.	cat͘aoir	cat͘aoireaċaiḃ
Voc.	a ċat͘aoir	a cat͘aoireaċa

SINGULAR (no Plural).

127.

Nom. & Acc.	Éire (Ireland)
Gen.	Éireann
Dat.	Éirinn
Voc.	a Éire

128.

Nom. & Acc.	Teaṁair (Tara)
Gen.	Teaṁraċ
Dat.	Teaṁraiġ or Teaṁair
Voc.	a Ṫeaṁair

129.

Nom. & Acc.	Alba (Scotland)
Gen.	Alban
Dat.	Albain
Voc.	a Alba

130. The following nouns are used only in the plural, referring originally rather to the *inhabitants* of the place than to the place itself:—

	Sacsana, England.		
Nom. & Acc.	Sacsana or Sacsain		
Gen.	Sacsan		
Dat.	Sacsanaiḃ		
	Laiġin, Leinster	Connaċta, Connaught	Ulaiḋ, Ulster
Nom. & Acc.	Laiġin	Connaċta	Ulaiḋ
Gen.	Laiġean	Connaċt	Ulaḋ
Dat.	Laiġniḃ	Connaċtaiḃ	Ultaiḃ

A large list of the commonly used nouns, which belong to this declension, are given in Appendix IV.

Heteroclite Nouns.

131. Heteroclite nouns are those which belong to more than one declension. The following are the chief nouns of this class. We give only the genitive case in the singular, as the other cases present no difficulty. The irregular nominative plurals only are given:—

NOUN.	DECLENSIONS.	GEN. SING.	NOM. PL.
briaṫar, a word	1 & 2	briaṫair bréiṫre	
sgiaṫ, a shield	1 & 2	sgéiṫ sgéiṫe	
teine, a fire	4 & 5	teine teineaḋ	teinte
beaṫa, life	4 & 5	beaṫa beaṫaḋ	
sliġe, a way	4 & 5	sliġe sliġeaḋ	sliġṫe
coill, a wood	2 & 5	coille coilleaḋ	coillte
móin, a bog	3 & 5	móna mónaḋ	móinte
talaṁ, m., land	1 & 5	talaiṁ, m. talṁan, f.	
eorna, barley	4 & 5	eorna eornan	
breiṫeaṁ, a judge	1 & 5	breiṫiṁ breiṫeaṁan	breiṫeaṁain breiṫeaṁna
feiċeaṁ[W 7], a debtor	1 & 5	feiċiṁ feiċeaṁan	feiċeaṁain feiċeaṁna
srón, f., a nose	2 & 3 1 & 2	sróine sróna	

cuaċ, a cuckoo		cuaiċ, m. cuaiċe, f.	cuaiċ cuaċa
cóṁra, a coffer, coffin	4 & 5	cóṁra cóṁran	cóṁrana
cáin, a tax	3 & 5	cána cánaċ	cána cánaċa
coróin, a crown	2 & 5	coróine corónaċ crónaċ	corónaċa

All abstract nouns ending in eas or as may belong either to the 1st or 3rd declension; as aoiḃneas, pleasure, gen. aoiḃnis or aoiḃneasa. Being abstract nouns they are seldom used in the plural.

Irregular Nouns.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
132.	teaċ, masc., a house.	
Nom. & Acc.	teaċ, tig	tiġṫe
Gen.	tiġe[22]	tiġṫe(aḋ), teaċ
Dat.	teaċ, tig	tiġṫiḃ
Voc.	a ṫeaċ, ṫig	a ṫiġṫe

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	sliaḃ, masc., a mountain.	
Nom. & Acc.	sliaḃ	sléiḃte
Gen.	sléiḃe	sléiḃte
Dat.	sléiḃ, sliaḃ	sléiḃtiḃ
Voc.	a ṡliaḃ	a ṡléiḃte

ȧtair, masc., a father.

Nom. & Acc.	ȧtair	aiṫre or	aiṫreaċa
Gen.	ȧtar	aiṫreaċ „	aiṫreaċa
Dat.	ȧtair	aiṫreaċaiḃ	
Voc.	a ȧtair	a aiṫre or	a aiṫreaċa

deirḃṡiúr, f., a sister (*by blood*).

Nom. & Acc.	deirḃṡiúr	deirḃṡiúraċa
Gen.	deirḃṡeaṫar	deirḃṡiúraċa
Dat.	deirḃṡiair	deirḃṡiúraċaiḃ

In these words the ḃṡ is pronounced like f.

The words máṫair, *a mother*; bráṫair, *a brother* (*in religion*); and dearḃráṫair, *a brother* (*by blood*), are declined like ȧtair. The genitive of siúr, *a sister* (*in religion*), is seaṫar (or siúra).

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	rí, masc., a king.	
Nom. & Acc.	rí	ríġṫe, ríoġa, ríoġṫa
Gen.	ríoġ	ríġṫe, ríoġ
Dat.	ríġ	ríġṫiḃ
Voc.	a rí	a ríġṫe

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	bean, fem., a woman.	
Nom. & Acc.	bean	mná
Gen.	mná	ban
Dat.	mnaoi	mnáiḃ
Voc.	a ḃean	a ṁná
	bó, fem., a cow.	
Nom. & Acc.	bó	ba
Gen.	bó	bó
Dat.	buin	buaiḃ
Voc.	a ḃó	a ḃa
	Dia, masc., God.	
Nom. & Acc.	Dia	Dée, Déiṫe
Gen.	Dé	Dia, Déiṫeaḋ
Dat.	Dia	Déiṫiḃ
Voc.	a Ḋé, a Ḋia	a Ḋée
	lá, masc., a day.	
	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	lá	laeṫe, laeṫeanta[23]
Gen.	lae	laeṫeaḋ, laeṫeanta, lá
Dat.	ló, lá	laeṫiḃ, laeṫeantaiḃ
Voc.	a lá	a laeṫe, a laeṫeanta

cré, fem., soil, earth.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cré	créiḋeana
Gen.	criaḋ, créiḋeaḋ	criaḋ
Dat.	créiḋ, cré	créiḋeanaiḃ
Voc.	a ċré	a ċréiḋeana

mí, fem., a month.

Nom. & Acc.	mí	míosa[24]
Gen.	míosa	míos
Dat.	mís, mí	míosaiḃ

ceó, masc., a fog.

Nom. & Acc.	ceó	ceoḋana, ceóċa
Gen.	ciaċ, ceoiġ	ceó
Dat.	ceó	ceóċaiḃ

ga, masc., a spear, javelin, sunbeam.

Nom. & Acc.	ga	gaeṫe, gaoi, gaoiṫe
Gen.	ga, gae, gaoi	gaoiṫe(aḋ), gaṫ
Dat.	ga	gaeṫiḃ, gaoiṫiḃ

ó or ua, masc., a grandson.

Nom. & Acc.	ó, ua	uí
Gen.	í, uí	ua
Dat.	ó, ua	iḃ, uiḃ
Voc.	a uí	a uí

gé, masc.[W 8], a goose

Nom. & Acc.	gé	or géaḋ	géanna, géaḋa, géiḋe
Gen.	gé	„ géiḋ, geoiḋ	géanna, géaḋ
Dat.	gé	„ géaḋ	géannaiḃ, géaḋaiḃ
Voc.	a ġé	„ a ġéaḋ	a ġéanna, a ġéaḋa

friġ, fem., a fleshworm.

Nom. & Acc.	friġ	friġdeaċa
Gen.	friġde	friġdeaċ(a)
Dat.	friġid	friġdeaċaiḃ

1. ↑ Do not confound sex with gender. Gender is decided by grammatical usage only.
2. ↑ Ainm is feminine in S. Munster.
3. ↑ This word is usually used in the plural; as ní ḟuil aon ḟiaca orm, I am not in debt.
4. ↑ cogaiḋe is also used.
5. ↑ When used as a noun.
6. ↑ Teaċ and sliaḃ, two masculine nouns, are sometimes given with the second declension. We give them as irregular nouns (par. 132).
7. ↑ A foot in measurement is troiġ, pl. troiġṫe.
8. ↑ Also spelled preuṁ in Munster.
9. ↑ Note the dative singular of these nouns, buiḋin and bruiḋin.
10. ↑ Also bláṫaiġe.
11. ↑ Also laṫaiġe.
12. ↑ Coill is also 5th declension. See Heteroclite nouns, par. 131.
13. ↑ Also spelled cnáiṁ in nom. sing.
14. ↑ Móin is also 5th declension. See Heteroclite Nouns, par. 131.

15. ↑ Bliaḋna after numerals, as oċt mbliaḋna, eight years.
16. ↑ Really pl. of gníoṁraḋ.
17. ↑ Cáin is also 5th declension.
18. ↑ Also spelled leabaiḋ.
19. ↑ Míle, a thousand, or a mile, is invariable after a numeral.
20. ↑ teine is also 5th. See Heteroclite nouns, par. 131.
21. ↑ Gnóṫaiḋe is spoken in Kerry.
22. ↑ It has also the forms toiġe in gen. and toiġ in dative.
23. ↑ Lá is generally used after numerals
24. ↑ Mí after numerals as oċt mí, 8 months: míonna is spoken in Kerry as plural of mí.

Cite error: <ref> tags exist for a group named "W", but no corresponding <references group="W"/> tag was found

---

Notes

Cite error: <ref> tags exist for a group named "W", but no corresponding <references group="W"/> tag was found

Notes (Wikisource)

Cite error: <ref> tags exist for a group named "W", but no corresponding <references group="W"/> tag was found

CHAPTER III.

The Adjective.

I. DECLENSION OF ADJECTIVES.

133. In Irish the adjective agrees with the noun which it qualifies in gender, number, and case.

There are four declensions of adjectives. Adjectives are declined very much like nouns; the great difference is that they never[1] take the termination ib in the dative plural (though formerly they did). The dative plural is invariably like the nominative plural.

Adjectives, in forming their genitive singular, undergo the same VOWEL-CHANGES as nouns, as—

gorm, blue, gen. masc. guirm
geal, bright „ gil, &c.

FIRST DECLENSION.

134. **All adjectives ending in a broad consonant,** as mór, bán, fionn, &c., **belong to the 1st declension.**

135. When an adjective of the 1st declension agrees with a masculine noun, it is declined like a noun of the 1st declension (see maor, &c,. pars. 55, 57), except that the nom., acc., dat.,

and voc. plural are always alike, and are formed by adding a to the nominative singular.

136. When an adjective of the 1st declension agrees with a feminine noun, it is declined like a noun of the 2nd declension (see COS, par. 67, &c.), but it never takes ib in the dative plural.

Adjectives ending in ać form their plural by adding a, both for masculine and feminine.

Examples.

137. mór, big

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
	Masc.	Fem.	Masc. & Fem.
Nom. & Acc.	mór	mór	móra
Gen.	móir	móire	mór
Dat.	mór	móir	móra
Voc.	móir	mór	móra

138. geal, bright

Nom. & Acc.	geal	geal	geala
Gen.	gil	gile	geal
Dat.	geal	gil	geala
Voc.	gil	geal	geala

139. díreaċ, straight, direct.

Nom. & Acc.	díreaċ	díreaċ	díreaċa
Gen.	díriġ	díriġe	díreaċ
Dat.	díreaċ	díriġ	díreaċa
Voc.	díriġ	díreaċ	díreaċa

140. The following list of adjectives gives examples of the vowel-changes mentioned above. The genitive masculine is given; the genitive feminine is formed by adding e:—

NOM.	GEN.		NOM.	GEN.	
lom	luim	bare	searḃ	seirḃ	bitter
gorm	guirm	blue	seang	seing	slender
borb	buirb	rough	geur	géir	sharp
crom	cruim	bent	díreaċ	dírigˊ	straight
donn	duinn	brown	uaigneaċ	uaignigˊ	lonely
bog	buig	soft	Albanaċ	Albanaigˊ	Scotch
boċt	boiċt	poor	fionn	finn	fair
trom	truim	heavy	fial	féil	generous
mear	mir	active	fliuċ	fliċ	wet
ceart	cirt (ceirt)	right	beag	big	small
deas	deis	pretty	críon	crín	withered
dearg	deirg	red	teann	teinn	stern

141. There are five or six adjectives of the first declension which are syncopated in the genitive singular feminine and in the plural:—

NOMINATIVE.	GEN. SING.		PLURAL.
	Masc.	Fem.	Both Genders.
uasal, noble	uasail	uaisle	uaisle
díleas, beloved, dear	dílis	dílse	dílse
reaṁar, fat	reaṁair	reiṁre	reaṁra
ísiol, low	ísil	ísle	ísle
gearr, short	girr[2]	giorra (irreg.)	gearra

SECOND DECLENSION.

142. **All adjectives ending in a slender consonant, except those in aṁail, belong to the second declension.**

In the singular all the cases, both masculine and feminine, are alike, *except the genitive feminine* which is formed by adding e.

In the plural both genders are alike. All the cases, with the exception of the genitive, are alike, and are formed by adding e to the nominative singular.

The genitive plural is the same as the nominative singular.

Example.

143. maiṫ, good

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
	Masculine.	Feminine.	Both Genders.
Nom. & Acc.	maiṫ	maiṫ	maiṫe
Gen.	maiṫ	maiṫe	maiṫ
Dat.	maiṫ	maiṫ	maiṫe
Voc.	maiṫ	maiṫ	maiṫe

144. Notice the following examples of syncope in the genitive feminine and in the plural:—

aoiḃinn,	gen. sing. fem. and pl.	aoiḃne,	pleasant
áluinn,	„	„	áilne (áille), beautiful
milis,	„	„	milse, sweet

145. The following adjectives are irregular:—

cóir,	gen. sing. fem. and plural	córa,	right, just
deacair,	„	„	deacra, difficult
socair,	„	„	socra, easy

THE THIRD DECLENSION.

146. **The third declension includes all those adjectives which end in aṁail.** This termination has the same signification as the English affix *like* in warlike, or *ly* in manly, princely, &c.

In both numbers the two genders are alike. All the cases in the singular are the same, except the genitive, which is formed by adding a. This is always accompanied by syncope. All the cases of the plural (except the genitive) are the same as the gen. sing. There are no exceptions or irregularities in this declension.

Example.

147. fearaṁail, manly

	SINGULAR. Both Genders.	PLURAL. Both Genders.
Nom. & Acc.	fearaṁail	fearaṁla
Gen.	fearaṁla	fearaṁail
Dat.	fearaṁail	fearaṁla
Voc.	fearaṁail	fearaṁla

FOURTH DECLENSION.

148. **All adjectives ending in a vowel belong to the fourth declension,** as fada, long; órḋa, golden. They have no inflexions whatever, all the cases, singular and plural, being exactly alike.

There are two exceptions—viz., te, hot, warm; and beo, alive. Te (often spelled teit, becomes teo in the genitive singular feminine, and also in the plural of both genders.

Beo, alive, becomes beoda in the plural. In the singular it is quite regular, except after the word Dia; its genitive is then bí, as Mac Dé bí, the Son of the living God.

Rules for the Aspiration of the Adjectives.

These rules really belong to Syntax, but for the convenience of the student we give them here.

149. (*a*) An adjective beginning with an aspirable consonant is aspirated in the nominative and accusative feminine singular, in the genitive masculine singular, and in the dative and vocative singular of both genders.

(*b*) The adjective is also aspirated in the nominative and accusative plural when the noun ends in a slender consonant.

Exceptions to the Rules for Aspiration.

150. (*a*) An adjective beginning with d or t is usually not aspirated when the noun ends in d, n, t, l, or s (dentals).

(*b*) c and g are usually not aspirated when the preceding word ends in c, g, or ng.

(*c*) p and b are usually not aspirated when the preceding word ends in p, b, or m.

These exceptions apply to most rules for the aspiration of nouns as well as adjectives.

(*d*) The **genitive** of nouns of the 3rd and 5th declesions ought not to have the initial of the adjective following them aspirated. Usage, however, differs somewhat on this point.

(*e*) In the spoken language of Connaught the adjective is not aspirated in the dative singular masculine.

Rules for Eclipsing the Adjective.

151. (*a*) The adjective is usually eclipsed in the genitive plural, even though the article is not used before the noun; and if the adjective begins with a vowel n is prefixed.

(*b*) The initial of an adjective following a noun in the dative sing. should, as a rule, be aspirated; but whenever the noun is eclipsed after the article the adjective is often eclipsed also; aspiration in this case is just as correct as eclipsis, and is more usual.

Examples

152. Noun, Adjective and Article declined in combination.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	an fear mór, the big man.	
Nom. & Acc.	an fear mór	na fir ṁóra
Gen.	an ḟir ṁóir	na ḃfear mór
Dat.	leis an ḃfear ṁór	leis na fearaiḃ móra
Voc.	a ḟir ṁóir	a ḟeara móra
	an tseamróg glas ḃeag, the green little shamrock.	
Nom. & Acc.	an tseamróg glas ḃeag	na seamróga glasa beaga
Gen.	na seamróige glaise bige	na seamróg nglas mbeag
Dat.	ó'n tseamróig glais ḃig	ó na seamrógaiḃ glasa beaga
Voc.	a ṡeamróg glas ḃeag	a ṡeamróga glasa beaga

an tsean-ḃean ḃoċt, the poor old woman.

Nom. & Acc.	an tsean-ḃean ḃoċt	na sean-ṁná boċta
Gen.	na sean-ṁná boiċte	na sean-ḃan mboċt
Dat.	do'n tsean-ṁnaoi ḃoiċt	do na sean-ṁnáiḃ boċta
Voc.	a ṡean-ḃean ḃoċt	a ṡean-ṁná boċta

N.B.—When an adjective precedes its noun it is invariable.

Comparison of Adjectives.

153. In Irish there are two comparisons—(1) the comparison of equality, (2) the comparison of superiority.

154. **The comparison of equality is formd by placing ċoṁ (or ċo), "as" or "so," before the adjective, and le, "as," after it.** (This le becomes leis before the article, and then causes eclipsis if the noun be singular.)

If a verb occurs in the second portion of the sentence, agus (**not** le) **must be used for the second "as"** *in English*. Tá Seaġán ċoṁ mór le Seumas, John is as big as James.

Ní ḟuil sé ċoṁ láidir leis an ḃfear, he is not as strong as the man. Ní ḟuil sé ċoṁ maiṫ agus (as) ḃí sé, he is not as good as he was.

155. **The comparison of superiority has three degrees**—the **positive**, the **comparative**, and the **superlative**. The positive is the simple form of the adjective, as bán, geal. The **comparative** and **superlative have exactly the same form as the genitive singular feminine** of the adjective, as báine, gile.

156. **The comparative degree is always preceded by some part of the verb** is, expressed or understood, and in almost every case is followed by the word ná (or iona), "than."

Is gile an ġrian ná an ġealaċ,
The sun is brighter than the moon.

An fearr tusa ná do ḋearḃráṫair?
Are you better than your brother?

157. In a comparative sentence the verb tá (or any other verb) may be used, but even then the *verb* is *must be used*.

Whenever tá (or any other verb) is used in a comparative sentence, **the comparative must be preceded by the word**

níos (*i.e.*, ní or nid, a thing, and the verb is) as—

Tá an ġrian níos gile ná an ġealaċ,
The sun is brighter than the moon.

An ḃfuil tú níos fearr ná do ḋearḃráṫair?
Are you better than your brother?

158. As stated in previous paragraph níos = ní + is. If the time of the comparison be past ní ba is used instead of níos. In conditional comparisons ní baḋ is employed.

Ba ḋóiċ liom go raiḃ Úna ní b'aoirde ná Máire.
I thought that Úna was taller than Máire.

159. **Every superlative sentence in Irish is a relative sentence.** Thus instead of saying "the best man" we say "the man (who) is best"; for "the tallest man," we say "the man (who) is tallest." The word "who" in this case is never translated, for the obvious reason that there is really no simple relative pronoun in Irish.

160. If the sentence happens to be in the past or future "the best man" will have to be translated as "the man (who) was best" or "the man (who) will be best." In such cases is or as can never be used. Ba or buḋ must be used in the past tense.

If the first portion of the sentence contains a verb in the conditional mood, the conditional of is (viz., do baḋ: do is often omitted) must be used.

The highest hill in Ireland, an cnoc is áirde i n-Éirinn.

The biggest man was sitting in the smallest chair,
Ḃí an fear ba ṁó na ṡuiḋe ins an gcaṫaoir ba luġa.

The best man would have the horse,
Do ḃeaḋ an capall ag an ḃfear do b'ḟearr

(Lit. The horse would be at the man (who) would be best).

The **English comparative of Inferiority** is translated by níos luġa followed by an abstract noun corresponding to the English adjective: *e.g.*, níos luġa fearaṁaileaċt, less manly.

Intensifying Particles.

161. The meaning of **an adjective can be intensified** by placing any of the following particles before the positive of the adjective. All these particles cause aspiration.

An, very; fíor (or fír), very or truly (as truly good); ríoġ, very; ríoġ ṁaiṫ, very good.

glé, pure (as pure white); ró, too, excessively.

sár, exceedingly; úr, very (in a depreciating sense).

maiṫ, good; an-ṁaiṫ, very good; fíor-ṁaiṫ, truly good; ró-ḟuar, too cold.

sár ṫe, excessively hot (warm); úir-ísiol, very low; úr-ġránda, very ugly. 162. In the spoken language the adjective is sometimes intensified by repeating the positive twice, as—

ḃí sé tinn tinn, he was very sick.

tá sé trom trom, it is very heavy.

lá fliuċ fliuċ, a very wet day.

163. **Sometimes** de **is annexed to the comparative;** it is really the prepositional pronoun de, of it.

Ní móide (mó + de) go raġad. It is not likely that I shall go.

Ní misde (measa + de) ḃeiṫ ag braṫ ort! It is no harm to be depending on you!

164. Although the comparative and the superlative are absolutely alike in form, yet they may be easily distinguished:—

(1) By the context; the comparative can be used only when we are speaking of two persons or things, the superlative is always used for more than two.

(2) By the word **ná** (than) which always follows the comparative, except when **de** is used; the superlative is never followed by either.

165. **When comparing adjectives** (*i.e.*, giving the three degrees of comparison), **it is usual to use níos before the comparative, and is before the superlative,** as—

POSITIVE.	COMPARATIVE.	SUPERLATIVE.
bán	níos báine	is báine
glas	níos glaise	is glaise

Remember that **níos** and **is** change their forms according to the tense of the verb in the sentence.

166. **Irregular Comparison.**

POSITIVE.	COMPARATIVE.
beag, little or small	luġa
fada, long	fuide, faide, sia
mór, big	mó
olc, bad	measa
maiṫ, good	fearr
gearr, short	giorra
breáġ,[3] fine	breáġṫa
minic, often	minicí, mionca
te (teiṫ), warm	teó
tirim, dry	tiorma
furus(a) } easy {	fusa
urus	usa
ionṁuin, dear, beloved	ionṁuine or annsa
gar, near (of place)	goire
fogus, near {	foigse
	foisge
treun, brave, strong {	tréine
	treise
gránda, ugly	gráinde

árd, high	{	áirde airde aoirde
iomḋa, many		mó or lia (more numerous)

Neasa and túisge, nearer, sooner, are comparatives which have no positive.

N.B.—The superlatives of the above adjectives have exactly the same forms as the comparatives.

167. **Numeral Adjectives.**

CARDINALS.		ORDINALS.
1,	aon aṁáin …	1st, ceud,[4] aonṁaḋ
2,	dá	2nd, dara, tarna, dóṁaḋ
3,	trí,	3rd, tríoṁaḋ, treas
4,	ceiṫre	4th, ceaṫraṁaḋ
5,	cúig	5th, cúigeaḋ, cúigṁaḋ
6,	sé	6th, seiseaḋ, séṁaḋ
7,	seaċt	7th, seaċtṁaḋ
8,	oċt	8th, oċtṁaḋ
9,	naoi	9th, naoṁaḋ
10,	deiċ	10th, deaċṁaḋ, deiċeaḋ
11,	aon deug	11th, aonṁaḋ deug
12,	dá ḋéag	12th, dara deug
13,	trí deug	13th, treas deug, tríoṁaḋ deug
14,	ceiṫre déag	14th, ceṫraṁaḋ

			deug
15,	cúig deug	15th,	cúigeaḋ deug
16,	sé deug	16th,	seiseaḋ deug
17,	seaċt deug	17th,	seaċtṁaḋ deug
18,	oċt deug	18th,	oċtṁaḋ deug
19,	naoi deug	19th,	naoṁaḋ deug
20,	fiċe	20th,	fiċeaḋ
21,	aon is (or as) fiċe; aon ar ḟiċid	21st,	aonṁaḋ ar ḟicid
22,	dó or dá is fiċe; dó or dá ar ḟiċid	22nd,	dara ar ḟiċid; dara … fiċead
23,	trí is fiċe; trí ar ḟiċid	23rd,	tríoṁaḋ ar ḟiċid or treas ar ḟiċid
30,	deiċ is fiċe [tríoċa]	30th,	deaċṁaḋ ar ḟiċid
31,	aon deug is fiċe	31st,	aonṁaḋ deug ar ḟiċid

32,	dó or dá ḋeug is fiċe	32nd,	dara deug ar ḟiċid
37,	seaċt deug is fiċe	37th,	seaċtṁaḋ deug ar ḟiċid
40,	dá ḟiċid [ceaṫraċa]	40th,	dá ḟiċideaḋ
41,	aon is dá ḟiċid	41st,	aonṁaḋ ar ḋá ḟiċid
44,	ceaṫair or ceiṫre is dá ḟiċid	44th,	ceaṫraṁaḋ ar ḋá ḟiċid
50,	deiċ is dá ḟiċid; leiṫċeud, caoga	50th,	deaċṁaḋ ar ḋá ḟiċid
51,	aon deug is dá ḟiċid	51st,	aonṁaḋ deug ar ḋá ḟiċid
60,	trí fiċid [seasga]	60th,	trí fiċideaḋ
61,	aon is trí fiċid	61st,	aonmaḋ ar ṫrí fiċid

70,	deiċ is trí fiċid [seaċtṁoġa]	70th,	deaċṁaḋ ar ṫrí fiċid
71,	aon deug is trí fiċid	71st,	aonṁaḋ deug ar ṫrí fiċid
80,	ceiṫre fiċid [oċtṁoġa]	80th,	ceiṫre fiċideaḋ
81,	aon is ceiṫre fiċid	81st,	aonṁaḋ ar ċeiṫre fiċid
90,	deiċ is ceiṫre fiċid [nóċa]	90th,	deaċṁaḋ ar ċeiṫre fiċid
91,	aon deug is ceiṫre fiċid	91st,	aonṁaḋ deug ar ċeiṫre fiċid
100,	céad (ceud)	100th,	ceudaḋ
101,	aon is ceud	101st,	aonṁaḋ ar ċeud
200,	dá ċeud	200th,	dá ċeudaḋ
300,	trí ċeud	300th,	trí ċeudaḋ
400,	ceiṫre ċeudaḋ	400th,	ceiṫre ċeudaḋ

800,	oċt gceud	800th,	oċt gceudaḋ
1000,	míle	1000th,	míleaḋ
2000,	dá ṁile	2000th,	dá ṁíleaḋ
3000,	trí ṁíle	3000th,	trí ṁíleaḋ
4000,	ceiṫre ṁíle	4000th,	ceiṫre ṁíleaḋ
1,000,000,	milliún	1,000,000th,	milliúnaḋ

Notes on the Numerals.

168. There is another very idiomatic way of expressing the numbers above twenty-one, viz., by placing the word fiċead alone after the first numeral:—deiċ fiċead, 30: fiċead is really the genitive of fiċe, so that the literal meaning of deiċ fiċead is ten of twenty; deiċ gcapaill fiċead, 30 horses; seaċt mba fiċead, 27 cows.

169. Whenever any numeral less than twenty is used by itself (*i.e.*, not followed immediately by a noun), the particle a[5] must be used before it. This a prefixes h- to vowels:—a h-aon, one; a dó, two; a h-oċt, eight.

Tá sé a ceaṫair a ċlog, it is four o'clock.

Tá sé leaṫ-uair d'éis a dó, it is half past two. 170. Very frequently in modern times the particle as (=agus)

is used instead of is in numbers. As in numbers is pronounced iss.

171. A dó and a ceaṫair **can be used only in the absence of nouns. If the nouns be expressed immediately after "two" and "four,"** dá **and** ceiṫre **must be used.**

172. Aon, one, when used with a noun almost always takes the word aṁáin after the noun; as, aon ḟear aṁáin, one man. Aon by itself usually means “any;” as, aon ḟear, any man; aon lá, any day. Sometimes aon is omitted and aṁáin only is used, as lá aṁáin, one day.

173. Under the heading "Ordinals" two forms will be found for nearly all the smaller numbers. *The forms given first are the ones generally used.* As the secondary forms are often met with in books, they are given for the sake of reference. Céad**, first, is used by itself, but** aonṁaḋ **is used in compound numbers, such as 21st, 31st &c.**

First, *as an adverb*, is ar d-tús or ar d-túis, never, ceud.

174. The d of dá two is always aspirated except after a word ending in one of the letters, d, n, t, l, s, or after the possessive adjective a, her.

The words for 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90, given in brackets, are the old words for these numbers; they are not used now, and are given simply for reference.

175. Fiċe, ceud, and míle, together with the old words for 30, 40, 50, &c., are really nouns[6] and can be declined.

Nom.	fiċe	gen.	fiċead	dat.	fiċid	pl.	fiċid
„	ceud	„	céid	„	ceud	„	ceudta
„	míle	„	míle	„	míle	„	mílte

The other words are 5th declension, and form their genitive by adding d.

176. Míle, **a thousand, or a mile, and** ceud, **a hundred never change their forms after a numeral;** naoi míle, 9,000, or 9 miles.

The Personal Numerals.

177. The following numeral nouns are used especially of persons. All, with the exception of dís and beirt, are compounds of the word fear, a man (the f of which has disappeared owing to aspiration), and the numeral adjectives.

aonar[7] (aon-ḟear)	one person
[dís (días)]	a pair, a couple
beirt	two persons, a couple[8]
triúr (or triar) (trí-ḟear)	three persons
ceaṫrar (ceaṫair-ḟear)	four persons
cúigear	five persons
seisear	six persons
mór-ṡeisear seaċtar }	seven persons
oċtar	eight persons
naonḃar or nónḃar	nine persons
deiċneaḃar	ten persons
dáreug (dá-ḟear-ḋeug)	twelve persons

N.B.—The singular form of the article is used before these numerals; as an cúigear fear, the five men.

The Possessive Adjectives.

178. The term “possessive pronouns” has been incorrectly applied by many grammarians to the “possessive adjectives.” A pronoun is a word that can stand for a noun and be separated from the noun, as the words “mine” and “his” in the sentences, “This book is mine,” “This cap is his.” If I wish to say in Irish,

“Did you see his father and mine?” I say, “An bfacais a athair agus m’ athair” (not agus mo). **The possessive adjectives in Irish can never stand alone; hence they are not pronouns.**

179. The possessive adjectives are as follows:—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
mo, my	ár, our
do, thy	bur (or bar), your
a, his or her	a, their

180. a, his; a, her; and a, their, are very easily distinguished by their initial effects on the following word.

181. The o of mo and do is elided whenever they are followed by a word beginning with a vowel or f, as m’ fuinneóg, my window; d’ athair, thy father.

182. Before a vowel do, thy, is very often written t or t, as d’ athair, t’ athair, t’ athair, thy father; even h-athair is sometimes wrongly written.

183. The possessive adjectives may take an emphatic increase, but this emphatic particle always follows the noun, and is usually joined to it by a hyphen; and should the noun be

followed by one or more adjectives which qualify it, the emphatic particle is attached to the last qualifying adjective.

The Emphatic Particles.

184. The emphatic particles can be used with (1) the possessive adjectives, (2) the personal pronouns, (3) the prepositional pronouns, and (4) the synthetic forms of the verbs. Excepting the first person plural all the particles have two forms. When the word to which they are attached ends in a *broad* vowel or consonant use the broad particles, otherwise employ the slender.

		SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.		-sa, -se	-ne
2.		-sa, -se	-sa, -se
3.	Masc.,	-san, -sean	-san, -sean
	Fem.,	-se, -si	

Examples.

mo ṫeaċ-sa, *my* house; a ṫeaċ-san, *his* house; ár dteaċ-ne, *our* house; mise, myself; seisean, himself; aca-san, at themselves; buailim-se, *I* strike.

185. The word féin may also be used (generally as a distinct word) to mark emphasis, either by itself or in conjunction with the emphatic particles: as

mo ṫeaċ féin, my own house
mo ṫeaċ-sa féin, even *my* house
mo ṫeaċ breáġ mór-sa, my fine large house

mo ṫeaċ féin and mo ṫeaċ-sa may both mean "my house," but the latter is used when we wish to distinguish our own property from that of another person; as, your house and mine, do ṫeaċ-sa agus mo ṫeaċ-sa.

186. The possessive adjectives are frequently compounded with the following prepositions:—

i, in (ann), in; le, with; do, to; ó, from; and fá, under.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
i, in or ann, in.	
im, am, ’mo, in my	nár, inár, i n-ár, in our
id, ad, ’do, in thy, in your	nbhur, i nbhur, in your
’na, i n-a, ina, in his, in her	na, i n-a, ina, in their

In the third person singular and plural iona, ionna, anna are also found written.

187.

le, with.

lem, le mo,*[9] with my
led, le do,*[9] with thy or your
le n-a, with his or her
le n-ár, with our
le ṅbur, with your
le n-a, with their

188.

do, to.

dom', do mo,*[9] to my
dod', do do,*[9] to thy or your
dá, to his or her
dár, to our
do ḃur, dá ḃur, to your
dá, to their

189.

ó, from.

óm, ó mo,*[9] from my
ód, ó do,*[9] from thy or your
ó n-a, from his or her
ó n-ár, from our
ó ṅbur, from your
ó n-a, from their

190.

fá or fó, under.

fám, fóm, under my
fá n-ár, fó n-ár, under our

fád, fód, under thy, your	fá nḃur, fó nḃur, under your
fá n-a, fó n-a, under his, her	fá n-a, fó n-a, under their

191. The following compounds are frequently used with verbal nouns:—

ag, at.

agom, ag mo,*[9] at my	’gár, ġár, ag ár, at our
agod, ag do,*[9] at thy, your	ag ḃur, at your
agá, ’gá, ġá, at his, her	agá, ’gá, or ġá, at their

192. **When “you” and “your” refer to one person, the singular words** tú **and** do **are used in Irish,** d’aṫair, your father (when speaking to one person), ḃur n-aṫair, your father (when speaking to more than one.)

193. Those of the above combinations which are alike in form are distinguished by the initial effect they cause in the following word; as, ó n-a ṫiġ, from **his** house; ó n-a tiġ, from **her** house; ó n-a dtiġ, from **their** house.

194. **The above combinations may take the same emphatic increase as the uncompound possessive adjectives;** óm ṫiġ féin, from *my* own house; óm ṫiġ breáġ ṁór-sa, from my fine large house.

Demonstrative Adjectives.

195. The demonstrative adjectives are so[10], this; sin,[11] that; and úd, that or yonder.

so is frequently written seo when the vowel or consonant preceding it is slender.

These words come after the nouns they qualify, and should the noun be followed by any qualifying adjectives, so, sin **or** úd **comes after the last qualifying adjective.**

It is not enough to say fear so or bean sin for "this man" or "that woman." **The noun must always be preceded by the article.** "This man" is an fear so; "these men," na fir seo; an ḃean so, this woman; an ḃean sin, that woman.

196. The word úd is used when a person or thing is connected in some way with the person to whom you speak or write; an fear úd, that man (whom you have seen or heard of); an oiḋċe úd, that particular night which you remember; or in pointing out an object at some distance, as—

> An ḃfeiceann tú an bád úd? Do you see that boat?

Also with the vocative case, as—

A ċloiginn úd ṫall atá gan teangaiḋ.
Thou skull over there that art without tongue.

Indefinite Adjectives.

197. **The chief indefinite adjectives are—**aon, **any;** éigin, **some, certain;** eile, **other;** uile (*after* the noun), **all, whole; and the phrase** ar biṫ, **any at all;** pé, **whatever.**

e.g., aon lá, any day; aon ċapall, any horse; an tír uile, the whole country; duine éigin, a certain person; an fear eile, the other man. An ḃfaca tú an leaḃar i n-áit ar biṫ? Did you see the book anywhere? Ní ḟuil airgead ar biṫ agam, I have no money at all. Biṫeaṁaċ dob' eaḋ an Síogaiḋe, pé uaisleaċt do ḃí aige nó ná raiḃ. The Siogaidhe was a rascal, whatever nobility he had or hadn't.

198. The following words are *nouns*, and are followed by a genitive or de with the dative. As they are employed to translate English indefinite adjectives, we give them here:—

mórán, much	ḃfuil mórán fíona agat, Have you much wine?
(an) iomad, a great deal, a great many}}	an iomad airgid, a great deal of money
beagán, little	beagán aráin, a little bread
(an) iomarca, too much	an iomarca uisge, too much water
an-ċuid, rather much	an-ċuid salainn, rather much salt
dóṫain, sáiṫ } enough, sufficient	tá mo ḋóṫain aráin agam, I have sufficient bread
oiread (agus), as much (as), so much (as)	an oiread sin óir, so much gold
tuilleaḋ, more	tuilleaḋ aráin, more bread
neart, plenty, abundance	neart airgid, plenty of money
cuid, roinn or roinnt, a share, some	cuid, roinn or roinnt óir, some gold
a lán, many, numerous	tá a lán fear mbreáġ i

n-Éirinn. There are many fine men in Ireland

199. **Translation of the word "Some."**

(*a*) As has been said, cuid, roinn or roinnt is used to translate the word "some," but there are other words used, as braon, a drop, used for liquids; dornán or doirnín, a fistful, used for hay, straw, corn, potatoes, &c.; grainín, a grain, used for meal, flour, tea, &c.; pinginn, a penny, used for money. All these words take a genitive.

(*b*) "Some of" followed by a noun is translated by cuid de followed by a dative case.

(*c*) "Some of" followed by a singular pronoun is translated by cuid de; when followed by a plural pronoun, by cuid ag.

Tá braon bainne agam,	I have some milk
Tá grainín siúcra aige,	He has some sugar
Cuid de na fearaiḃ,	Some of the men
Tá cuid de sin olc,	Some of that is bad
Tá cuid aca so olc,	Some of these are bad

Translation of "Any."

200. (*a*) When “any” is used in connection with objects that are usually counted it is translated by aon with a singular noun; as aon ḟear, any man; ḃfuil aon ċapall agat? or ḃfuil capaill ar biṫ agat? Have you any horses?

The following phrases followed by a genitive case are used for “any” with objects that are not counted: aon ġreim, for bread, butter, meat, &c.: aon deór for liquids; aon ġrainín, for tea, sugar, &c.; ḃfuil aon ġreim feola aige? Has he any meat?

(*b*) “Any of” followed by a noun is translated by aon duine de, for persons; aon ċeann de, for any kind of countable objects; aon ġreim de, &c., as above. An ḃfaca tú aon duine de na fearaiḃ? Did you see any of the men? &c.

(*c*) “Any of” followed by a plural pronoun is translated by the phrases given in (*b*), but the preposition ag is used instead of de; as—

Ní ḟuil aon ceann aca annsin. There is not any of them there.

Ní raiḃ aon duine againn annso ċeana. Not one of us was here before.

Distributive Adjectives.

201. Gaċ, each, every, as gaċ lá, every day: uile (before the noun), every; the definite article, *or* gaċ, must be used with uile; as an uile fear, every man. Ḃi gaċ uile ċeann aca tinn. Every one of them was sick.

Gaċ re, every other, every second; gaċ re ḃfocal, every second word.

202. **The Interrogative Adjectives.**

> ca or cé, what, as cé ṁéad. what amount? *i.e.*, how much or how many?
> ca h-áit, what place? ca h-ainm atá ort? What is your name? ca h-uair, what hour? when?

In English we say “what a man,” “what a start,” &c., but in Irish we say “what the man,” “what the start,” as caidé an geit do ḃainfeaḋ sé aisti! What a fright he would give her! (lit. he would take out of her).

1. ↑ When used as nouns they take the termination.
2. ↑ gearra is sometimes used in the spoken language.
3. ↑ This word was formerly spelled breáġḋa or breáġṫa, and these forms may be used in the plural.

4. ↑ The c of ceud is usually aspirated after the article.
5. ↑ In Ulster and Munster the article an is used instead of this a.
6. ↑ See Syntax, par. 511 and 512.
7. ↑ Used in the idiomatic expression for “alone.” See par. 654.
8. ↑ Lánaṁa, a married couple.
9. ↑ 9.09.19.29.39.49.59.69.7 The forms marked with an asterisk are used in the North.
10. ↑ Also sa, seo, or se.
11. ↑ Also soin, sain or san.

Notes

CHAPTER IV.

The Pronoun.

203. In Irish there are **nine classes of Pronouns:—Personal, Reflexive, Prepositional, Relative, Demonstrative, Indefinite, Distributive, Interrogative,** and **Reciprocal** pronouns. There are no Possessive pronouns in Irish.

204.

Personal Pronouns.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1st pers.	mé, I	sinn, we
2nd pers.	tú, thou	sib, you
3rd pers.	sé, he sí, she	siad, they

Each of the above may take an **emphatic increase**, equivalent to the English suffix *self*.

205.

Emphatic Forms of the Personal Pronouns.

1st pers.	mise, myself	sinne, ourselves
2nd pers.	tusa, thyself	siḃse, yourselves
3rd pers.	seisean, himself sise, herself	siad-san, themselves

206. The word féin is added to the personal pronouns to form the **reflexive pronouns;** as do ḃuaileas mé féin, I struck myself.

The reflexive pronouns are as follows:—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
mé féin, myself	sinn féin, ourselves
tú féin, thyself	siḃ féin, yourselves
é féin, himself í féin, herself	iad féin, themselves

207. The above are also used as *emphatic pronouns;* as, Ċuaḋamar a ḃaile, mé féin agus é féin. Both he and I went home.

208. **The Personal Pronouns have no declension.**

It has already been shown that mo, do, a, etc., which are usually given as the genitive cases of the personal pronouns, are not pronouns, but adjectives; because they can never be used without a noun.

The compounds of the pronouns with the preposition do (to) are usually given as the dative cases of the personal pronouns; but agam, agat, etc., or the compounds with any of the other prepositions in par. 216, are just as much the datives of the personal pronouns as dom, duit, &c. Hence the *Irish personal pronouns have no declension.*

209. The Personal Pronouns have however *two forms*:— The **conjunctive** and the **disjunctive. The conjunctive forms are used only immediately after a verb as its subject; in all other positions the disjunctive forms must be used.** The disjunctive forms are also used after the verb is.

The reason why these forms follow is is that the word immediately after is is *predicate*,[1] not *subject*; and it has just been stated that the conjunctive forms can be used only in immediate connection with a verb as its subject.

Conjunctive Pronouns.

210. mé tú, sé, sí, sinn, siḃ, siad.

Disjunctive Pronouns.

211. mé { tú, / ṫú, } é, í, { sinn, / inn, } { siḃ, / iḃ, } iad,

In mé, tú, ṫú, the vowel is often shortened in Munster, when there is no stress or emphasis. It is shortened in mé, sé, é, siad and iad in Ulster, when there is no stress.

212. The disjunctive pronouns can be *nominatives* to verbs, but then they will be separated from the verbs: or they may be used in immediate connection with a verb *as its object*.

He is a man, is fear é (nominative).

He was the king, dob'é an rí é (both nominatives).

This is smaller than that, is luġa é seo ná é siúd (both nominatives).

I did not strike him, níor ḃuaileas é (accusative).

The Neuter Pronoun eaḋ.

213. The pronoun eaḋ is most frequently used in replying to a question asked with any part of the verb is followed by an indefinite predicate.[2] Nać breáġ an lá é? Is eaḋ go deiṁin. Isn't it a fine day? It is indeed. An Sacsanać é? Ní h-eaḋ. Is he an Englishman? He is not.

This pronoun corresponds very much with the "unchangeable le" in French: as, Etes-vous sage? Oui, je *le* suis.

Whenever is in the question is followed by a pronoun, eaḋ cannot be used in the reply. An é Cormac an rí? Ní h-é. Is Cormac the king? He is not.

Is eaḋ is usually contracted to 'seaḋ (shăh).

214. The phrase is eaḋ ('seaḋ) is often used to refer to a clause going before; as, i gCaṫair na Mart, is eaḋ, ċodail mé aréir. In Westport, it was, that I slept last night. Nuair is mó an anḟoćain (anaćain), is eaḋ, is goire an ċabhair. When the distress is greatest, then it is that help is nearest.

215. In Munster when the predicate is an indefinite noun it is usual to turn the whole sentence into an eaḋ-phrase; as —It is a fine day. Lá breáġ, ’seaḋ é. He is a priest Sagart, ’seaḋ é. He was a slave. Daor, dob ’eaḋ é. Elsewhere these sentences would be, is lá breáġ é; is sagart é; ba ḋaor é.

Prepositional Pronouns
or
Pronominal Prepositions.

216. Fifteen of the simple prepositions combine with the disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns; and to these combinations is given the name of Prepositional Pronouns or Pronominal Prepositions.

All these compounds are very important. As five or six of them occur most frequently these will be given first, and the remainder, if so desired, may be left until the second reading of the book. The important combinations are those of the prepositions, ag, at; ar, on; le, with; ó, from; and ċun, towards.

All the combinations may take an emphatic suffix. One example will be given.

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
217.		ag, at or with.	
1st pers.	agam, at me		againn, at us
2nd pers.	agat, agad,	at thee	agaiḃ, at you
3rd pers.	aige, aici,	at him at her	aca, at them

218. The combinations of ag with the emphatic suffixes.

1st pers.	agamsa, at myself		againne, at ourselves
2nd pers.	agatsa, at thyself		agaiḃse, at yourselves
3rd pers.	aigesean, himself	at	acasan, at themselves
	aicisi, at herself		

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
219.	ar, on.	
1st pers.	orm, on me	orainn, on us
2nd pers.	ort, on thee	oraiḃ, on you
3rd pers.	air, on him uirri or uiṙti on her	oṙta or orra, on them

220.	do, to.	
1st pers.	dom,[3] dam, to me	dúinn, to us
2nd pers.	duit, to thee	daoiḃ, díḃ, to you
3rd pers.	dó to him di, to her	dóiḃ, to them

The initial d of these combinations and also those of de are usually aspirated except after a word ending in one of the letters d, n, t, l, s.

221. le, with.

liom, with me	linn, with us
leat, with thee	liḃ, with you
leis, with him	
léi, léiṫi, } with her	leo, with them

222. ó, or ua,[4] from.

uaim,	from	me	uainn,	from	us
uait,	"	thee	uaiḃ,	"	you
uaiḋ,[5]	"	him	uaṫa,	"	them
uaiṫi	"	her			

SINGULAR. PLURAL.

223.

ċun, towards.

ċugam,[6]	towards me		ċugainn,	towards us
ċugat, ċugad,	„	thee	ċugaiḃ,	„ you
ċuige,	„	him	ċúca,	„ them
ċuici,	„	her		

224.

roiṁ, before.

róṁam,	before me		róṁainn,	before us
róṁat, róṁad,	„	thee	róṁaiḃ,	„ you
roiṁe, roimis,	„	him	rómpa,	„ them
roimpi,	„	her		

225.

as, out.

asam,	out of me		asainn,	out of us
asat, asad,	} „	thee	asaiḃ,	„ you
as	„	him	asta,	„ them
aisti,	„	her		

226.

i, in (or ann) in.

ionnam,	in me		ionnainn,	in us
ionnat,	„	thee	ionnaiḃ,	„ you
ann	„	him	ionnta,	„ them
innti,	„	her		

227.

de off, from.

díom,	off or from me		dínn,	off or from us	
díot,	„	thee	díḃ,	„	you
de	„	him	díoḃ,	„	them
di,	„	her			

SINGULAR. PLURAL.

228.

fé, fá, faoi, under.

fúm,	under me		fúinn,	under us	
fút,	„	thee	fúiḃ,	„	you
faoi,	„	him	fúṫa,	„	them
fúiṫi,	„	her			

229.

idir, between.

eadram,	between me		eadrainn,	between us	
eadrat	„	thee	eadraiḃ,	„	you
idir é	„	him	eatorra (or eadra)	„	them
idir í,	„	her			

230.

ṫar, over or beyond.

ṫarm or ṫorm,	over me		ṫarainn or ṫorainn,	over us	
ṫart or ṫort,	„	thee	ṫaraiḃ	„ ṫoraiḃ,	„ you
ṫairis	„	him			
ṫairsi or ṫairsti,	„	her	ṫarsa	„ ṫarsta,	„ them

231.

tré, through.

tríom,	through me		trínn,	through us	
tríot,	„	thee	tríḃ,	„	you
tríd	„	him	} tríoṫa,	„	them
tríṫi,	„	her			

The ṫ of these combinations is often aspirated.

232.

um, about.

umam,	about me		umainn,	about us	
umat,	„	thee	umaiḃ,	„	you
uime	„	him	} umpa,	„	them
uimpi,	„	her			

The Relative Pronoun.

In Old Irish there was a relative particle used after prepositions, and also a compound relative, but no simple relative in the nominative and accusative cases. The modern relative, in these cases, has arisen from a mistaken idea about certain particles. Before the imperfect, the past, and conditional the particle do should, strictly speaking, be used. Certain irregular but often used verbs had also an unaccented first syllable, as atá, do-ḃeirim, do-ċím,

&c. These particles and syllables being unaccented were generally dropped at the beginning, but retained in the body, of a sentence, where the relative naturally occurs. Hence they were erroneously regarded as relative pronouns, from analogy with other languages.

In Modern Irish the relative particle may or may not be used in the nominative and accusative cases.

Although this is the origin of the modern relative nevertheless *it is used as a real relative* in modern Irish. Whether we call this a a relative particle or a relative pronoun is a mere matter of choice. We prefer the first name.

There is a relative frequently met with in authors, viz.—noċ, meaning who, which or that. This relative is not used in modern spoken Irish, in fact it seems never to have been used in the spoken language.

233. In modern Irish there are three simple relatives, **the relative particles** A and GO, which signify *who*, *which*, or *that*; and **the negative particle** NAĊ, signifying *who … not*, *which … not*, *that … not.*

The relative go is not found in literature, but it is so generally used in the spoken dialect of Munster that it must be regarded as a true relative. Go is not used as the subject or object of a *verb*, its use is confined to the *prepositional* (*dative*) *case*.

There are also the **compound relatives** pé, gibé, cibé, *whoever*, *whosoever*, *whatever*, and a (causing eclipsis) *what*, *that which*, *all that.*

234. **The relative particle A expressed or understood, causes aspiration; but when preceded by a preposition or when it means "all that," it causes eclipsis, as do GO and NAĊ.**

An fear a ḃuailim.	The man whom I strike.
An fear a ḃuaileann mé.	The man who strikes me.
An buaċaill naċ mbeiḋ ag obair.	The boy who will not be at work.
An ḃean go ḃfuil an ḃó aici.	The woman who has the cow.
A gcaiṫim san lá.	All that I spend per day.
Sin a raiḃ ann.	That's all that was there.
Do sgairt a raiḃ láiṫreaċ.	All who were present burst out laughing.
An áit ’na ḃfuil sé.	The place in which he is.

235. **The relative a when governed by a preposition, or when it means "all that," unites with ro**, the particle formerly used before the past tense of regular verbs, and

becomes ar. This ar unites with the prepositions do (to) and le (with) and becomes dár and ler.

Ar ċaiṫeas san lá.	All that I spent per day.
An fear dár ġeallas mo leaḃar. or An fear ar ġeallas mo leaḃar dó.	The man to whom I promised my book.
An tslat ler buaileaḋ é.	The rod with which he was beaten.

236. The pronouns cé and pé unite with ro, but only with the verb is.

Cé ’s ḃ’í féin? Who was she?
Pé ’s ḃ’é féin Whoever he was

237. **Whenever the relative follows a superlative, or any phrase of the nature of a superlative, use** dá (= de + a). Before the past tense of regular verbs dá becomes dár (= dá + ro)

Ḃéarfad duit gaċ uile níḋ dá ḃfuil agam.

I will give you *everything* that I have.

Is é sin an fear is aoirde dár ḃuail riaṁ.

That is the *tallest* man that I have ever met.

Ní maiṫ leis aon níḋ da dtugas dó.

He does not like a single thing I gave him.

Demonstrative Pronouns.

238. The demonstrative pronouns are so or seo, *this*; sin, sain, soin, san, *that*; súd or siúd, *that* (*yonder*). The secondary forms o or eo, in, and iúd are very common in colloquial usage in Connaught and Munster.

These secondary forms have sometimes been written ṡo, ṡin, etc.

Is fíor sin.	That is true.
’Seaḋ san.	The matter is so.
Tá sé go h-aindeis agat, tá san.	You have it in a mess, so you have.
B’in í an áit.	That was the place.
Deirim-se gurb iúd é an fear ḋíḃ.	I say that that is the man for you.
B’ in é críoċ an sgéil.	That was the end of the affair.
An in é an bosga?	Is that the box?
Ní h-oí an áit.	This is not the place,
B’ in é an buaċaill ċuige.	That was the boy for it.

239. When we are referring to a definite object these pronouns take the form é seo, í seo, iad so, é sin, í sin, iad sain, etc. This is especially the case when the English words "this," "that," etc., are equivalent to "this one," "that one," etc.

Tóg é sin.	Lift (or take) that.
’Sé seo an fear.	This is the man.
Dob’ é sin Seaġán.	That was John.
’Sí sin Briġid.	That’s Brigid.
Cé h-iad so?	Who are these?
An é siúd Tomás?	Is that (person yonder) Thomas?
Ní h-é, ’sé siúd é, or siúd é é.	No; that’s he.

’Sé seo = is é seo; ’Sé sin = is é sin, etc.

In the spoken language the phrases is é sin é, is é siúd é, etc, are very frequently contracted to sin é, sin í, siúd é, etc.

Siúd é.	That is he.
Siúd é Taḋg.	Yonder is Thade.
Sin é an casúr.	That’s the hammer.

The forms siné, siní, sidé, sidí, are also frequently used.

Sidé atá orm.	That is what ails me.
Siní an áit.	That’s the place.
Sidí annso í.	Here she is here.
Siní í.	That is she (*or* it).
Sidé é.	This is he (*or* it.

240. Súd, yonder, qualifies a pronoun; whilst úd qualifies a noun: as, , yonder man; a fear súd, yonder woman’s husband.

Indefinite Pronouns.

241. The principal indefinite pronouns are—

cáċ (gen. cáiċ), all, everybody, everyone else.
uile, all.
éinne, éinneaċ (aoin’ne), anybody.

The following are *nouns*, but they are used to translate English indefinite pronouns, hence we give them here:—

duine ar biṫ, anyone at all.
cuid … cuid eile, some … others
beagán, a few.

An dtáinig éinne annso? Did anyone come here?

“Cia h-é do ḃáiḋ an macraiḋ?” ar cáċ. “Who is he who drowned the youths?” said all.

Cé ṁéud uḃall agat? (or An ’mó uḃall agat?) Tá beagán agam. How many apples have you? I have a few.

Uile ḋóiḃ. To them all.

Do-ġeiḃmíd uile an bás. We all die.

Do ċuadar so uile seaċa aṁail sgáile. All these went past like a shadow.

Distributive Pronouns.

242. The distributive pronouns are:—gaċ, each; gaċ uile, everyone; gaċ aon, each one, everyone; ceaċtar, either. ’Ċuile is a contraction for gaċ uile.

Ní ḟuil ceaċtar aca agaim, I have not either of them.

Bíoḋ a fios ag gaċ aon. Let each one know.

Óir bíonn (bí) fíoċ Dé leis (ris) gaċ h-aon ċailleas a reaċt. For the anger of God is on each one who violates His law.

N.B.—The tendency in present-day usage is to employ distributive adjectives followed by appropriate nouns rather than distributive pronouns: *e.g.* Everyone went home. Do ċuaiḋ gaċ uile duine a ḃaile.

Interrogative Pronouns.

243. The chief interrogative pronouns are:—cia or cé, who, which; cad, creud, or caidé, what; cé or ceurd (cia rud), what; cia leis, whose; cia aca (cioca), which of them, cé (or cia) agaiḃ, which of you.

Cé rinne é sin?	Who did that?
Cad atá agat?	What have you?
Cad é sin agat?	What is that you have?
Caidé atá ort? Cad tá ort?	} What ails you?
Cé aca is fearr? Cioca is fearr?	} Which of them is the better?
Cia an fear?	Which or what man?
Cia na fir?	Which men?
Cia an luaċ?	What price?
Caidé an rud é sin?	What is that?
Cé leis an leaḃar?	Whose is the book?

244. Notice in the last sentence the peculiar position of the words. The interrogative pronoun always comes first in an Irish sentence, even when it is governed by a preposition in English. In Irish we do not say “With whom (is) the book?” but “Who with him (is) the book?”

Further examples of the same construction:—

Cé leis é so?	Whose is this?
Cé aige an leaḃar?	Who has the book?
A Ṡeaġáin, dtiocfaiḋ tú go Gailliṁ? Cad ċuige?	John, will you come to Galway? *What for?*
Cia leis ḃfuil tú cosṁail?	Whom are you like?

We may also say, Cia ḃfuil tú cosṁail leis?

Notice that the adjective cosṁail, *like*, takes le, with; not do, to.

245. **N.B.—The interrogative pronouns are always nominative case** in an Irish sentence. In such a sentence as, Cia ḃuaileadar? Whom did they strike? cia is nominative case to is understood, whilst the suppressed relative is the object of buaileadar. In cia leis, cad ċuige, &c., leis and ċuige are prepositional pronouns, not simple prepositions.

Reciprocal Pronoun.

246. The reciprocal pronoun in Irish is a ċéile,[7] meaning *each other, one another*. Ċuir Fionn a láṁa i láṁaiḃ a ċéile, Finn put their hands in the hands of one another. Do sgar Osgar agus Diarmuid le n-a ċéile. Oscar and Diarmuid separated from each other (lit. “separated with each other”). Ḃuaileadar a ċéile. They struck each other.

Phrases containing the Reciprocal Pronoun.

ó ċéile,[8] from each other, separated or asunder.
le ċéile,[9] together.
mar a ċéile, like each other, alike.

trí n-a ċéile,
tré n-a ċéile } confused, without any order.

oiread le ċéile, each as much as the other.
i ndiaiḋ a ċéile, one after the other, in succession.
as gaċ fásaċ i n-a ċéile, out of one desert into another

1. ↑ This statement will be explained later on. See par. 589
2. ↑ For "indefinite predicate" refer to par. 585
3. ↑ daṁ (= dom) is the literary and also the Ulster usage. The emphatic form is doṁsa, never domsa, except in Connaught.
4. ↑ Ua is never used as a simple preposition.
5. ↑ Uaḋ and uaiḋe (= uaiḋ) are also both literary and spoken forms.
6. ↑ The g in these combinations is aspirated in Munster, except in ċuige.
7. ↑ Literally, his fellow.
8. ↑ ó ċéile, = ó n-a ċéile.
9. ↑ le ċéile, = le n-a ċéile. This last form is often used and explains the aspiration in le ċéile.

Notes

CHAPTER V.

THE VERB.

Conjugations.

247. **In Irish there are two conjugations of regular verbs.** They are distinguished by the formation of the future stem. All verbs of the first conjugation form the first person singular of the future simple in -fad or -fead, whilst verbs of the second conjugation form the same part in -óċad or -eóċad.

Forms of Conjugation.

248. Every Irish verb, with the single exception of is, has three forms of conjugation: The **Synthetic**, the **Analytic**, and the **Autonomous**.

249. The **synthetic, or pronominal form**, is that in which the persons are expressed by means of terminations or inflections. All the persons, singular and plural, with the single exception of the third person singular, have synthetic forms in practically every tense. The third person singular can never have its nominative contained in the verb-ending or termination.

The following example is the present tense synthetic form of the verb mol, *praise*:—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
molaim, I praise.	molaimid, we praise.
molair, thou praisest.	moltaoi, you praise.
molann sé, he praises.	molaid, they praise.

250. In the **analytic form** of conjugation the persons are not expressed by inflection; the form of the verb remains the same throughout the tense and the persons are expressed by the pronouns *placed after the verb*. The form of the verb in the third person singular of the above example is the form the verb has in the analytic form of the present tense.

The analytic form in every tense has identically the same form as the third person singular of that tense.

N.B.—The analytic form is generally employed in asking questions.

The following is the analytic form of the present tense of mol:—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
molaim, I praise.	molann sinn, we praise.
molann tú, thou praisest.	molann sib, you praise.
molann sé, he praises.	molann siad, they praise

The analytic form is used in all the tenses, but in some of the tenses it is rarely, if ever, found in some of the persons: for instance, it is not found in the first person singular above. As the analytic form presents no difficulty, it will not be given in the regular table of conjugations.

251. We are indebted to the Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P., for the following explanation of the **Autonomous Form** of conjugation:—

"This third form—*the Autonomous*—has every one of the moods and tenses, but in each tense it *has only one person*, and that person is only *implied*. It is really a personality, but it is not a specific personality. It is only a general, undefined personality.

"This third form of an Irish verb has some very unique powers…. I shall illustrate one. An English verb cannot of itself make complete sense alone; this form of an Irish verb can. For instance, 'Buailtear' is a complete sentence. It means, 'A beating is being administered,' or, 'Somebody is striking.' Irish grammarians have imagined that this form of the verb is

passive voice. No, it is not passive voice, for it has a passive of its own; and, again, all intransitive verbs (even the verb tá) possesses this form of conjugation. The nearest equivalents in sense and use to this Irish form are the German '*mann*' and the French '*on*' with the third person singular of the verb."—*Gaelic Journal.*

The usual translation of the French phrase "*on dit*" is, "*It is said*." "Is said" is certainly passive voice in English, but it does not follow that "*dit*" is passive voice in French. The same remark holds with regard to the Irish phrase "buailtear an gaḋar," which is usually translated, "The dog is struck." Buailtear is not passive voice; it is *active voice, autonomous form*, and gaḋar is its object in the *accusative case*. The literal translation of the phrase is, "Somebody strikes the dog." The passive voice of buailtear, *someone strikes*, is táṫar buailte, *someone is struck.*

252. As this is the first grammar that has adopted the term "*Autonomous form of the Verb*," we think it advisable to state that the form of the verb which we give as the *Autonomous form* is given in other Irish grammars as the *passive voice*. A fuller treatment of the Autonomous Verb will be found at the end of the book, where we endeavour to show that in *modern* Irish, at least, this form of the verb is *active voice*. The name by which this form of the verb ought to be called is not merely a matter of terms, for on it depends the case of the following noun or pronoun: *i.e.*, whether such noun or pronoun is the *subject* or *object* of the verb.

As *all* Irish scholars have not accepted the *Autonomous form* of the verb, since it appears that formerly, at least, the verb was not Autonomous, being inflected for the plural number, it has been suggested that both names be retained for the present. In the first edition of this grammar the term "*Indefinite*" was given to this form, but as the name "Autonomous," which means *possessing the power of self government*, is far more expressive, it has been adopted instead of "Indefinite."

As the Autonomous form has only one inflection for each tense, this inflection is given immediately after each tense in the tables of conjugation.

MOODS AND TENSES.

253. Verbs have three moods, the **Imperative**, the **Indicative**, and the **Subjunctive**.

Some grammars add a fourth mood, the Conditional; and some omit the Subjunctive. The Conditional form, however, is always either Indicative or Subjunctive in meaning, and is here classed as a tense under the Indicative Mood.

The **Imperative** has only one tense, the Present. Its use corresponds to that of the Imperative in English.

The **Indicative Mood** has five tenses, the Present, the Imperfect, the Past, the Future, and the Conditional.

The **Present Tense** corresponds to the English Present, and like it usually denotes *habitual action*.

The so-called Consuetudinal or Habitual Present—i.e., the third person singular ending in -ann—in no way differs from the other parts of the Present in regard to time. The verb bí, however, has a distinct Present, bím, denoting habitual action. In English the Present—*e.g., I write*—generally denotes habitual action. *Present action* is usually signified by a compound tense, *I am writing*. So in Irish the Present, sgríobaim, denotes *habitual action*, and present action is denoted by the compound tense, táim ag sgríobadh. However, as in English, the Present Tense of certain verbs, especially those relating to the *senses* or the *mind*, denote *present* as well as habitual action—*e.g.*, cluinim, *I hear*; creidim, *I believe*.

The **Imperfect Tense** is also called the *Habitual* or *Consuetudinal Past*. It denotes habitual action in past time; as, do sgríobainn, *I used to write*.

The **Past Tense** is also called the *Perfect* and the *Preterite*. It corresponds to the Past Tense in English; as, do sgríobas, *I wrote*.

Continuous action in past time is denoted by a compound tense, as in English—*e.g.*, do bíos ag sgríobas, *I was writing*.

The **Future Tense** corresponds to the Future in English: as sgríobfad, *I shall write*.

The **Conditional** corresponds to the Compound Tense with "*should*" or "*would*" in English: as do sgríobfá, *thou wouldst write*.

The Conditional is also called the **Secondary Future**, because it denotes a future act regarded in the past: as, Adubairt sé go sgríobfad sé. He said that he would write.

In the **Subjunctive Mood** there are only two Tenses, the Present and the Past. This mood is used principally to express a wish, and also after certain conjunctions. See par. 550, &c.

Active Voice, Ordinary Form.

254. Each Tense has the following forms:—

1. The action is merely stated, as—

Buaileann Seaġán an clár,
John strikes the table.

2. The action is represented as in progress, as—

Tá Seaġán ag bualaḋ an ċláir,
John is striking the table.

3. The action as represented as about to happen—

Tá Seaġán { ċum / ar tí } an ċláir do ḃualaḋ,
John is about (is going) to strike the table.

4. The action is represented as completed, as—

Tá Seaġán d'éis an ċláir do ḃualaḋ,
John has just struck the table.

Active Voice, Autonomous Form.

255. Each Tense has the following forms, corresponding exactly to those given in the preceding paragraph.

1. Buailtear an clár,

Someone strikes the table.

2. Tá ṫar a bualaḋ an ċláir,

Someone is striking the table.

3. Tá ṫar { ċum / ar tí } an ċláir do ḃualaḋ,

Someone is about to strike the table.

4. Tá ṫar d'éis an ċláir do ḃualaḋ,

Someone has just struck the table.

256. **Passive Voice, Ordinary Form.**

1. (This form is supplied by the Autonomous Active.)

2. Tá an clár dá (or ġá) ḃualaḋ,

The table is being struck.

3. Tá an clár { ċum / ar tí } a ḃuailte,

The table is about to be struck.

4. Tá an clár buailte,

The table has (just) been struck.

257. **Passive Voice, Autonomous Form.**

1. Tátar buailte,

Someone is struck.

2. Tátar fé bualad.

Someone is being struck.

3. Tátar { cum / ar tí } beit buailte,

Someone is about to be struck

4. Tátar buailte,

Someone has (just) been struck

258. **The Principal Parts of an Irish Verb are—**

(1) The 2nd sing. of the Imperative Mood.

(2) The 1st sing. of the Future Simple.

(3) The Past Participle (also called the Verbal Adjective).

(4) The Verbal Noun.

(*a*) The **Imperative 2nd. pers. sing.** gives the stem of the verb from which most of the other tenses and persons are formed.

(*b*) The **Future** tells to what conjugation (first or second) the verb belongs, and gives the stem for the Conditional.

(*c*) The **Past Participle** shows whether t is aspirated or unaspirated in the following persons, which are formed from the past participle—*i.e.*:

Present, *2nd plural.*
Imperfect, *2nd singular.*

Autonomous.

Imperative, *Present*, and *Imperfect*.

Verbal noun.

Gen. sing. and *nom. plural*.

(*d*) With the **Verbal Noun** are formed the compound tenses.

The four following types include all verbs belonging to the first conjugation: —

259. **Principal Parts.**

Type.	Imper.	Future.	P. Participle.	Verbal Noun.	Meaning.
1.	mol	molfad	molta	molaḋ	praise
2.	reub	reubfad	reubṫa	reubaḋ	burst or tear
3.	buail	buailfead	buailte	bualaḋ	strike
4.	fóir	fóirfead	fóirṫe	fóiriṫin	help, succour

N.B.—No notice need be taken of the variation in form of verbal nouns, as they cannot be reduced to any rule, but must be learned for each verb. The ending aḋ or eaḋ is that most frequently found, but there are numerous other endings. (See pars. 315 and 316).

260. (1) and (2) are the types for all verbs of the first conjugation whose stem ends in a broad consonant; whilst (3) and (4) are the types for the verbs of the same conjugation whose stem ends in a slender consonant.

As the conjugations of types (2) and (4) are identical with those of types (1) and (3) respectively, except the aspiration of the ṫ in the endings mentioned in par. 258 (c), we do not think it necessary to conjugate

in full the four types. We shall give the forms in modern use of the verbs mol and buail, and then give a rule which regulates the aspiration of t in the Past Participle. (See par. 282).

FIRST CONJUGATION.

In the following table the forms marked with an asterisk are not generally used in the analytic form. The forms in square brackets were used in early modern Irish, and are frequently met with in books. Alternative terminations are given in round brackets.

261. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SINGULAR.

1st.	——		——
2nd.	mol, praise thou		buail, strike thou
3rd.	molaḋ sé, let him praise		buaileaḋ sé

PLURAL.

1.	molaimís (-amuis) molam	let praise us	buailimís (eamuis) buaileam
2.	molaiḋ, praise (you)		buailiḋ
3.	molaidís, moladaois,	let them praise	buailidís

Autonomous.

	moltar	buailtear

The negative particle for this mood is ná.

Present Tense.

SING.	1.	*molaim, I praise	*buailim, I strike
	2.	molair, &c.	buailir
	3.	molann[a]	buaileann[c] sé
PLUR.	1.	molaimíd (amuid)	buailimíd (-imid)
	2.	molann sib[b]	buaileann sib[d]
	3.	molaid	buailid

[a][molaiḋ] [b][moltaoi] [c][buailiḋ] [d][buailtí]

Autonomous.	Moltar	buailtear
Relative form.	Ṁolas	ḃuaileas
Negative.	Ní ṁolaim,	I do not praise.
„	Ní ḃuailir,	You do not strike.
Interrogative.	An molann sé?	Does he praise?
„	An mbuailim?	Do I strike?
Neg. Interrog.	Naċ molaid?	Do they not praise?
„	Naċ mbuaileann sé?	Does he not strike?

263. **Imperfect Tense.**

SING.	1.	*ṁolainn, I used to praise	*ḃuailinn
	2.	*ṁoltá, &c.	*ḃuailteá
	3.	ṁoladḋ sé	ḃuaileadḋ sé
PLUR.	1.	ṁolaimís (-amuis)	ḃuailimís (or imis)
	2.	ṁoladḋ siḃ	ḃuaileadḋ siḃ
	3.	ṁolaidís / ṁoladaois	ḃuailidís
Autonomous.		Moltaoi,	Buailtí.
Negative.		Ní ṁolainn,	I used not praise.
„		Ní ḃuaileadḋ sé,	He used not strike.
Interrogative.		An moltá?	Used you praise?
„		An mbuailidís?	Used they strike?
Neg. Interrog.		Naċ ṁolainn?	Used I not praise?
„		Naċ mbuailinn?	Used I not strike?

264. **Past Tense.**

SING.	1.	ṁolas, I praised	ḃuaileas
	2.	ṁolais	ḃuailis
	3.	ṁol sé	ḃuail sé
PLUR.	1.	ṁolamar	ḃuaileamar
	2.	ṁolaḃar	ḃuaileaḃar
	3.	ṁoladar	ḃuaileadar
Autonomous.		Molaḋ	buaileaḋ
Negative.		Níor ṁolas,	I did not praise.
„		Níor ḃuail sé,	He did not strike.
Interrogative.		Ar ṁolais?	Did you praise?
„		Ar ḃuaileas?	Did I strike?
Neg. Interrog.		Nár ṁol sé?	Did he not praise?
„		Nár ḃuaileamar?	Did we not strike?

265. **Future Tense.**

SING.	1.	molfad, I shall praise	buailfead
	2.	molfair, thou wilt praise	buailfir
	3.	molfaiḋ sé, &c.	buailfiḋ sé
PLUR.	1.	molfaimíd (-amuid)	buailfimíd (imid)
	2.	molfaiḋ siḃ[a]	buailfiḋ siḃ[b]
	3.	molfaid	buailfid
Relative form.		ṁolfas	ḃuailfeas
Autonomous.		Molfar[c]	buailfear[d]
Negative.		Ní ṁolfad,	I shall not praise.
„		Ní ḃuailfiḋ sé,	He will not strike.
Interrogative.		An molfaiḋ sé?	Will he praise?
„		An mbuailfead?	Shall I strike?
Neg. Interrog.		Naċ molfair?	Will you not praise?
„		Naċ mbuailfid?	Will they not strike?

[a][molfaiṫí] [b][buailfiṫí]

[c][molfaiḋear] [d][buailfiḋear]

266. **Conditional or Secondary Future.**

SING.	1.	ṁolfainn, I would praise	ḃuailfinn
	2.	ṁolfá	ḃuailfeá
	3.	ṁolfaḋ sé	ḃuailfeaḋ sé
PLUR.	1.	ṁolfaimís (famuis)	ḃuailfimís (fimis)
	2.	molfaḋ siḃ	ḃuailfeaḋ siḃ
	3.	ṁolfaidís ṁolfadaois	ḃuailfidís
Autonomous.		Molfaí	buailfí
Negative.		Ní ṁolfainn,	I would not praise.
„		Ní ḃuailfeá,	You would not strike.
Interrogative.		An molfá,	Would you praise ?
„		An mbuailfeaḋ sé,	Would he strike?
Neg. Interrog.		Naċ molfaḋ sé?	Would he not praise?
„		Naċ mbuailfimís?	Would we not strike?

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

267. **Present Tense.**

SING.	1.	molad	buailead
	2.	molair	builir
	3.	molaiḋ sé	builiḋ sé
PLUR.	1.	molaimid (-amuid)	builimíd (-imid)
	2.	molaiḋ siḃ[a]	builiḋ siḃ[b]
	3.	molaid	builid
Autonomous.		moltar	builtear

The negative particle is nár, which always aspirates when possible.

[a][moltaoi] [b][builtí]

268. **Past Tense.**

SING.	1.	molainn	builinn
	2.	moltá	builteá
	3.	molaḋ sé	builiaḋ sé
PLUR.	1.	molaimís (amuis)	builimís (-imis)
	2.	molaḋ sibh	builiaḋ sibh
	3.	molaidís moladaois	builidís
Autonomous.		moltaoi	builtí
Verbal Noun.		molaḋ	bualaḋ
Verbal Adj.		molta	builte

NOTES ON THE MOODS AND TENSES.

The Present Tenses.

269. The Present Tense is always formed by adding aim, air, &c., to the stem when the last vowel is broad; if the last vowel is slender add im, ir, eann, &c. The last syllable of the first person plural is often pronounced rapidly—*e.g.*, molamuid (mul′-a-mwid), creidimid (k′red′imid); but in the South of Ireland this syllable is lengthened, molaimíd (mul′-a-meed), creidimíd (k′red′-imeed). Verbs of more than one syllable ending in ig add míd, not imíd, in the first person plural of this tense.

270. In Ulster the ending muid of the first person plural is very often separated from the verb, and used instead of the pronoun sinn as Ċonnaic muid é. We saw him; Ċonnaic sé muid. He saw us. On no account should this corruption be imitated by the student.

271. The *old* form of the third person singular ended in aiḋ or iḋ, and the analytic forms *found in books*, and sometimes in the northern dialect, are got from this form: as molaiḋ sinn, we praise.

272. The analytic form is not usually found in the first person singular of this tense, nor is the synthetic form often used in the second person plural.

The Imperfect Tense.

273. The initial consonant of this tense is usually aspirated in the active voice, when possible.

The termination aḋ or eaḋ in the 3rd sing. of this tense, as also in the Imperative and Conditional, is pronounced aċ, or aṁ.

274. When none of the particles ní, an, naċ, &c., precede the Imperfect Tense, do may be used before it. This do may be omitted except when the verb begins with a vowel or f. The compound particles, níor, ar, nár, gur, cár, &c. can *never* be used with the Imperfect Tense.

275. Whenever the word "*would*" is used in English to describe what used to take place, the Imperfect Tense, not the Conditional, is used in Irish, as—

He *would* often say to me. Is minic adeiread sé liom.

The Past Tense.

276. In the Past Tense active voice the initial consonant of the verb is aspirated. The remark which has just been made with regard to the use of do before the Imperfect Tense applies also to the Past Tense.

In the Autonomous form do does not aspirate, but prefixes h to vowels.

277. With the exception of the aspiration of the initial consonant, the third person singular of this tense is exactly the same as the second person singular of the Imperative (*i.e.*, the stem of the verb).

278. The particle formerly used before the Past Tense was ro. It is now no longer used by itself, but it occurs in combination with other particles.

The most important of these compounds are:—

(1)	Ar, whether (an + ro).	Ar ḃuail sé? Did he strike?
(2)	Gur, that (go + ro).	Deir sé gur ḃuaileas é. He says that I struck him.
(3)	Cár, where (cá + ro).	Cár ċeannuiġis an capall? Where did you buy the horse?
(4)	Munar, unless (muna + ro).	Munar ḃuail sé, unless he struck.
(5)	Níor, not (ní + ro).	Níor ċreid sé. He did not believe.
(6)	Nár or náċar, whether … not.	Nár ċreid sé? Did he not believe?
(7)	dár, to whom (do, to + a + ro).	An fear dár ġeallas mo leaḃar. The man to whom I promised my book.
(8)	ler, by or with which (le + a + ro).	An maide ler buaileaḋ é, The stick with which they beat him (or he was beaten).

279. **The compounds of ro aspirate.** These compounds are used with the Past Tense of all verbs except the following:—raiḃ, was; tug, gave or brought; rug, bore; faca, saw; táinig, came; fuair, found, got; deacaiḋ, went; deárna, made or did.

The compounds of ro are used in some places before tug and táinig.

N.B. Deaċaiḋ and deárna are used instead of ċuaiḋ and rinne after negative and interrogative particles. Instead of deaċaiḋ and deárna, ċuaiḋ and ḋein (ḋin) are used in Munster.

The Future Tense and Conditional.

280. All the inflections of the Future and Conditional in the first conjugation begin with the letter f, which in the spoken language is generally pronounced like "h." This "h" sound combines with the letters b, d and g (whenever the stem ends in these) changing them in sound into p, t, c, respectively.

creidfead is usually pronounced k′ret′-udh
fágfad „ „ fau′-kudh
sgríobfad „ „ shgree-pudh

N.B.—F is sounded in the second sing. Conditional active and in the Autonomous form.

281. The particle do, causing aspiration, may be used before the Conditional when no other particle precedes it.

Note that the terminations of the Imperative Mood, the Imperfect Tense, and the Conditional are almost the same, excepting the letter f of the latter.

Rule for the Aspiration of T of Past Participles.

282. **The T of the past participle is generally aspirated except after the letters D, N, T, L, S, Ṫ, Ḋ, Ċ, and** (*in verbs of one syllable*) **Ġ.**

There is a great tendency in the spoken language *not* to aspirate the t in all verb inflexions after consonants: *e.g.*, tugta, tugtar, deirtear, etc.

283. This participle cannot be used like the English participle to express action. He *was praised* is generally molaḋ é; very seldom bí sé molta. *The Irish participle has always the force of an adjective* denoting the complete state, never the force of an *action in* progress.

284. After is the Past Participle denotes what is *proper* or *necessary*, as, Ní molta ḋuit é. He is not to be praised by you. This form, called the **Participle of Necessity**, should probably be regarded as distinct from the ordinary past participle, as it may occur in verbs which have no past participle, *e.g.*:—

"Is deiṁin naċ ḃfuil duine naċ beiṫte ḋó ar coiméad orm." "It is certain that there is no person *who will not have to be* on his guard against me." (Letter of Seán Ó Néill, 1561.) "Tuigṫear as an sgeul, naċ beiṫte do neaċ dul i n-eudóċas." It may hence be learned that *it is not proper* for anyone to fall into despair. Ní beiṫte ag a ṡeunaḋ (or simply, ní seunta). It must not be denied. Here beiṫte is the *Participle of Necessity* of the verb bí.

285. **Derivative Participles.**

ion-ṁolta	in-reubṫa	ion-ḃuailte	ion-ḟóirṫe
so-ṁolta	so-reubṫa	so-ḃuailte	so-ḟóirṫe
do-ṁolta	do-reubṫa	do-ḃuailte	so-ḟóirṫe

286. The prefix ion- or in- denotes what *is proper or fit to be done*: as ion-ṁolta, fit to be praised, deserving of praise.

The prefix so- denotes *what is possible or easy to do*: as so-reubṫa, capable of being burst, easy to burst.

287. The prefix do- denotes *what is impossible or difficult to do*: as do-ḃuailte, incapable of being struck, hard to strike.

288. These derivative participles seem to be formed rather from the genitive of the verbal noun than from the participle: as faġáil, finding.

so-ḟaġála, easily found. do-ḟaġála, hard to find.

289. Declension of Verbal Noun.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. Acc.	molaḋ	molta
Gen.	molta	molaḋ (molta)
Dat.	molaḋ	moltaiḃ

Nom. Acc.	bualaḋ	buailte
Gen.	buailte	bualaḋ (buailte)
Dat.	bualaḋ	buailtiḃ

290. Many verbal nouns are seldom or never used in the plural. As a rule the genitive singular of the verbal noun is identical in form with the past participle; but many verbal nouns are declined like ordinary nouns: nearly all those ending in aċt, áil, and aṁain belong to the 3rd declension—*e.g.*, gaḃáil, act of taking; gen., gaḃála: riṫ, running; gen. reaṫa; leanaṁain, act of following; gen. leanaṁna: siuḃal, act or walking; gen. siuḃail: fás, act of growing; gen. fáis, &c.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

291. The second conjugation comprises two classes of verbs—(1) **derived verbs** in iġ or uiġ; and (2) **syncopated verbs**.

292. **Syncopated verbs** are those in which the vowel in the final syllable of the stem is omitted when any termination *commencing with a vowel* is added: as laḃair, *speak*; laḃraim (not laḃairim), *I speak*. **Verbs of more**

than one syllable whose stem ends in il, in, ir, is, ing, **belong to this class.**

VERBS IN IĠ (-UIĠ).

293. Principal Parts.

Type.	Imper.	Future.	Past Participle.	V. Noun.	Meaning
1.	bailiġ	baileóċad	bailiġṫe	bailiuġaḋ	gather
2.	ceannuiġ	ceannóċad	ceannuiġṫe	ceannaċ	buy

294. Except in the *Future* and *Conditional*, all verbs in iġ and uiġ are conjugated like buail (first conjugation), except that the t is aspirated in all terminations beginning with that letter. It is, therefore, necessary to give only the Future and Conditional in full.

295. Future.

SINGULAR.

1.	baileóċad, I shall gather,	ceannóċad, I shall buy
2.	baileóċair,	ceannóċair.
3.	baileóċaiḋ sé,	ceannóċaiḋ sé.

PLURAL.

1.	baileóċaimíd (-ċamuid),	ceannóċaimíd (-ċamuid).
2.	baileóċaiḋ siḃ,	ceannóċaiḋ siḃ.
3.	baileóċaid,	ceannóċaid.
Relative.	ḃaileoċas,	ċeannóċas.
Autonomous.	baileoċṫar,	ceannóċṫar.

296. Conditional.

SINGULAR.

1.	ḃaileóċainn, I would gather,	ċeannóċainn, I shall buy
2.	ḃaileóċṫá,	ċeannóċṫá.
3.	ḃaileóċaḋ sé,	ċeannóċaḋ sé.

PLURAL.

1.	ḃaileóċaimís (-amuis),	ċeannóċaimís (-amuis).
2.	ḃaileóċaḋ siḃ,	ċeannóċaḋ siḃ.
3.	{ ḃaileóċaidís ḃaileóċadaois	{ ċeannóċaidís ċeannóċadaois

Autonomous. baileoċṫaí ceannóċṫaí

297. In early modern usage, when the stem ended in -uiġ, preceded by d, n, t, l, or r, these consonants were usually attenuated in the Future and Conditional: as árduiġ, *raise*, future áirdeóċad; saluiġ, *soil*, future saileóċad; but nowadays árdóċad, salóċad, &c., are the forms used.

Syncopated Verbs.

298. The personal endings of syncopated verbs vary somewhat according as the *consonant commencing* the last syllable of the stem is broad or slender.

Type (1). Stems in which the last syllable *commences with a broad consonant*, [1] as fuagair (fógair), *proclaim*.

Type (2). Stems in which the last syllable *commences with a slender consonant*, as coigil, *spare*.

299. In early modern usage the Future is formed by lengthening the vowel sound of the last syllable of the stem from ai or i to eó. In the case of Type 1 the broad consonant which commences the final syllable of the stem must be made slender. Examples: innis, inneosad, *I shall tell;* díbir, díbeorair, *you will banish;* imir, imeoraiḋ sé, *he will play;* coigil, coigeolad, *I shall*

spare; fuagair, fuaigeoraid, *they will proclaim;* d'ḟuaigeoraḋ sé, *he would proclaim;* codail, coideolad, *I shall sleep;* ċoideolainn, *I would sleep.*

300. In the present-day usage the Future stem is formed as if the verb ended in iġ or uiġ: by adding -óċ in Type 1 and -eóċ in Type 2.

301. Principal Parts.

	Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	V. Noun.
Type (1).	fuagair	fuagróċad	fuagarṫa	fuagra(ḋ)

302.

Type (2).	coigil	coigleóċad	coigilte	coigilt

303

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SING.	1.	—	—
	2.	fuagair, proclaim	coigil, spare
	3.	fuagraḋ sé	coigleaḋ sé
PLUR.	1.	fuagraimís	coiglimís
	2.	fuagraiḋ	coiglíḋ
	3.	fuagraidís (-adaois)	coiglidís
Autonomous.		fuagarṫar	coigiltear

INDICATIVE MOOD.

304. Present Tense.

SING.	1.	fuagraim, I proclaim	coiglim, I spare
	2.	fuagrair	coiglir
	3.	fuagrann sé[a]	coigleann[c] sé
PLUR.	1.	fuagraimíd	coiglimíd
	2.	fuagrann sib[b]	coigleann sib[d]
	3.	fuagraid	coiglid
Relative.		ḟuagras	ċoigleas
Autonomous.		fuagarṫar	coigiltear

305. Imperfect Tense.

SING.	1.	d'ḟuagrainn	ċoiglinn
	2.	d'ḟuagarṫá	ċoigilteá
	3.	d'ḟuagraḋ sé	ċoigleaḋ sé
PLUR.	1.	d'ḟuagraimís	ċoiglimís
	2.	d'ḟuagraḋ sib	ċoigleaḋ sib
	3.	d'ḟuagraidís (-daois)	ċoiglidís
Autonomous.		fuagarṫaoi	coigiltí

306. Past Tense.

SING.	1.	d'ḟuagras	ċoigleas
	2.	d'ḟuagrais	ċoiglis
	3.	d'ḟuagair sé	ċoigil sé
PLUR.	1.	d'ḟuagramar	ċoigleamar
	2.	d'ḟuagraḃar	ċoigleaḃar
	3.	d'ḟuagradar	ċoigleadar

Autonomous.	fuagraḋ	coigleaḋ

[a][fuagraiḋ] [b][fuagarṫaoi] [c][coiliḋ] [d][coigiltí]

307. Future Tense.

SINGULAR.

1.	fuagróċad	coigleóċad
2.	fuagróċair	coigleóċair
3.	fuagróċaiḋ sé	coigleóċaiḋ sé

PLURAL.

1.	fuagróċaimíd	coigleóċaimíd
2.	fuagróċaiḋ siḃ	coigleóċaiḋ siḃ
3.	fuagróċaid	coigleóċaid
Relative Form.	ḟuagróċas	ċoigleóċas
Autonomous.	fuagróċṫar	coigleóċṫar

308. Conditional.

SING.	1.	d’ḟuagróċainn	ċoigleóċainn
	2.	d’ḟuagróċṫá	ċoigleóċṫá
	3.	d’ḟuagróċaḋ sé	ċoigleóċaḋ sé
PLUR.	1.	d’ḟuagróċaimís	ċoigleóċaimís
	2.	d’ḟuagróċaḋ siḃ	ċoigleóċaḋ siḃ
	3.	d’ḟuagróċaidís	ċoigleóċaidís
Autonomous.		fuagróċṫaí	coigleóċṫaí

309. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

SING.	1.	fuagrad	coiglead
	2.	fuagrair	coiglir
	3.	fuagraiḋ sé	coiliḋ sé
PLUR.	1.	fuagraimíd	coiglimíd
	2.	fuagraiḋ siḃ	coiliḋ siḃ
	3.	fuagraid	coiglid
Autonomous.		fuagartṫar	coigiltear

310. Past Tense.

SING.	1.	fuagrainn	coiglinn
	2.	fuagarṫá	coigilteá
	3.	fuagraḋ sé	coigleaḋ sé
PLUR.	1.	fuagraimís	coiglimís
	2.	fuagraḋ siḃ	coigleaḋ siḃ
	3.	fuagraidís	coiglidís
Autonomous,		fuagarṫaoi	coigiltí

311. Past Participle and Participle of Necessity.

fuagarṫa	coigilte

312. Compound Participles.

ion-ḟuagarṫa	ion-ċoigilte
so-ḟuagarṫa	so-ċoigilte
do-ḟuagarṫa	do-ċoigilte

313. Verbal Nouns.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
NOM. ACC.	fuagra(ḋ) (fuagairt)	fuagarṫa
GEN.	fuagarṫa	fuagra(ḋ) (fuagarṫa)
DAT.	fuagra(ḋ) (fuagairt)	fuagarṫaiḃ

NOM. ACC.	coigilt	—
GEN.	coigilte	—
DAT.	coigilt	—

314. In stems of Type (2) ending in r, the Participle is usually in the form earṫa, not irṫe, as díbir, *banish*: díbearṫa, *banished;* imir, *play*; imearṫa, *played.*

The endings formed on the participle [see par. 258 c.] follow this change, *e.g.*, Imperfect 2nd singular, díbeartá; Present Auton., díbeartar, &c.

315. General Rules for the formation of Verbal Noun.

(*a*) As a general rule verbs of the first conjugation form their verbal noun in ad, if the final consonant of the stem be broad; in ead, if it be slender, as—

dún, shut	dúnad
mill, destroy	millead
mol, praise	molad
léig, read	léigead.

(*b*) When the last vowel of the stem is i preceded by a broad vowel, the i is *usually* dropped in the formation of the verbal noun, as—

buail, strike	bualad
dóig, burn	dógad
goin, wound	gonad
brúig, bruise	brúgad

The i is not dropped in—

caoin, lament	caoinead
sgaoil, loose	sgaoilead
smuain, reflect	smuainead

(*c*) Verbs of the second conjugation ending in in, il or ir generally form their verbal noun by adding t, as—

díbir, banish díbirt
cosain, defend cosaint (cosnaṁ)
labair, speak labairt
coigil, spare coigilt

(*d*) Derived verbs ending in uiġ form their verbal noun by dropping the i and adding aḋ; as, árduiġ, *raise*, árduġaḋ.

(*e*) Derived verbs in iġ form their verbal noun by inserting u between the i and ġ and then adding aḋ; as mínigh, *explain*, míniugaḋ.

316. There are, however, many exceptions to the above rules. The following classification of the modes of forming the verbal noun will be useful.

(*a*) Some verbs have their verbal noun like the stem, *e.g.*, fás, grow; ól, drink; riṫ, run; snáṁ, swim, &c.

(*b*) Some verbs form their verbal noun by dropping i of the stem, *e.g.*, cuir, put or send, cur; coisg, check, cosg; sguir, cease, sgur; guil, weep, gul, &c.

(*c*) Some verbs add aṁain or eaṁain to the stem to form their verbal noun, *e.g.*, caill, lose, caillеaṁain(t); creid, believe, creideaṁain(t); fan, stay, fanaṁain(t), lean, follow, leanaṁain(t); sgar, separate, sgaraṁain(t), &c.

In the spoken language t is usually added to the classical termination -aṁain.

(*d*) A few add an or ean for the verbal noun, *e.g.*, leag, knock down, leagan; léig, let or permit, léigean; tréig, abandon, tréigean; teilg, throw or cast, teilgean.

(*e*) A few add aṁ or eaṁ, e.g., seas, stand, seasaṁ; caiṫ, spend, consume, caiṫeaṁ; deun, do or make, deunaṁ (or deunadh); feiṫ, wait, feiṫeaṁ.

(*f*) A small number end in áil or , as gaḃ, take, gaḃáil; faġ, find, faġáil; fág, leave, fágáil; fead, whistle, feadġail.

A fairly full list of irregular verbal nouns is given in Appendix V.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

317. In Old and Middle Irish the conjugation of verbs was very complex, but by degrees the varieties of conjugations became fewer, and nearly all verbs came to be conjugated in the same way. At the commencement of the modern period (*i.e.*, about the end of the sixteenth century) about fifteen verbs in common use retained their old forms. These are now classed as irregular. Excepting occasional survivals of older forms, all the other verbs had by this time become regular; so that from the stem of the verb it was possible in nearly every instance to tell all its forms except the *verbal noun*.

During the modern period even the irregular verbs have, through the operation of analogy, shown a tendency to adopt the forms of the modern regular conjugations.

TÁIM, I AM.

318. The correct spelling of this verb is undoubtedly atáim, but long since it has lost its initial a, except when it occurs in the middle of a sentence, where it usually has a relative force. Some persons, by confounding this initial a, which really belongs to the verb, with the *modern* relative particle a, write the a separated from the tá: as a tá instead of atá.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

319.	—	bímís, let us be
	bí, be thou	bídid, let you be
	bíod sé, let him be	bídís, let them be
	Autonomous, bítear.	

The **negative particle** is ná.

All the persons, except the 2nd sing., are often written as if formed from the spurious stem bid: *e.g.*, bidead sé.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

320. Present Tense—Absolute.

SYNTHETIC FORM.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
táim, I am	táimid, we are
táir[2] thou art	tá sib, tátaoi, you are
tá sé, he is	táid, they are
Autonomous, tátar	

Present Tense (Analytic Form).

tá mé, I am	tá sinn, we are
tá tú, thou art	tá sib, you are
tá sé, he is	tá siad, they are

321. Present Tense—Dependent.

fuilim	fuilmíd
fuilir	fuil sib
fuil sé	fuilid
Autonomous, fuiltear.	

Negatively.	**Interrogatively.**	**Neg. Interrog.**
I am not, &c.	Am I, &c.	Am I not, &c.
ní ḟuilim	an ḃfuilim	naċ ḃfuilim
ní ḟuilir	an ḃfuilir	naċ ḃfuilir
ní ḟuil sé	an ḃfuil sé	naċ ḃfuil sé
ní ḟuilmíd	an ḃfuilmíd	naċ ḃfuilmíd
ní ḟuil siḃ	an ḃfuil siḃ	naċ ḃfuil siḃ
ní ḟuilid	an ḃfuilid	naċ ḃfuilid

The analytic forms are like those given above; as, ní ḟuil siad, naċ ḃfuil tú, &c.

322. **Habitual Present.**

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
bím (biḋim)	bímíd (biḋmid)
bír (biḋir)	bíonn siḃ, bíṫí
bíonn sé (bíḋ sé, biḋeann sé)	bíḋ (biḋid)

Negatively, ní ḃím, &c. **Interrogatively,** an mbím, &c.

Neg. Interrog., naċ mbím, &c.

Relative form ḃíos (ḃiḋeas).

Autonomous, bítear

323. **Imperfect Tense** (*I used to be*).

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
do ḃínn (do ḃiḋinn)	do ḃímís (ḃiḋmís)
„ bír („ biḋir)	„ bíoḋ siḃ
„ bíoḋ sé („ biḋeaḋ sé)	„ bídís (biḋdís)
Autonomous,	bítí
Negatively,	ní ḃínn
Interrogatively,	an mbínn?
Neg. interrog.	naċ mbínn?

324. **Past Tense.**

ABSOLUTE.

do ḃíos (ḃiḋeas)	do ḃíomar (ḃiḋeamar)
„ ḃís (ḃiḋis)	„ ḃíoḃar (ḃiḋeaḃar)
„ ḃí sé	„ ḃíodar, ḃiḋeadar

Autonomous, ḃíṫeas

325. DEPENDENT.

raḃas	raḃamar
raḃais	raḃaḃar
raiḃ sé	raḃadar

Autonomous, raḃṫas

Negative, ní raḃas, ní raḃais, ní raiḃ sé, &c.

Interrogatively (*Was I? &c.*).

an raḃas an raḃais an raiḃ sé an raḃamar, &c.

Neg. interrog. (*Was I not? &c.*).

nać raḃas nać raḃais nać raiḃ sé, &c.

326. **Future Tense**.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
béad, bead (béiḋead)	béimid, beimíd (béiḋmíd)
béir, beir (béiḋir)	béiḋ siḃ, béiṫí
béiḋ, beiḋ sé	béid, beid (béiḋid)
Relative Form,	ḃeas, ḃéas (ḃéiḋeas)
Autonomous,	béiṫear, beifear
Negatively,	ní ḃéad
Interrog.,	an mbéad?
Neg. Interrog.,	nać mbéad?

327. **Secondary Future or Conditional.**

do ḃéinn (ḃéiḋinn)	ḃéimís (ḃéiḋmís)
„ ḃéiṫeá (ḃéiḋṫeá)	ḃéaḋ, ḃeaḋ (ḃéiḋeaḋ) siḃ
„ ḃéaḋ, ḃeaḋ (ḃéiḋeaḋ) sé	ḃéidís (ḃéiḋdís)
Autonomous,	beiḋfí, béiṫí
Negative,	ní ḃéinn
Interrog.,	an mbéinn
Neg. interrog.,	nać mbéinn

328. THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present Tense.

go raḃad go raḃmuid
go raḃair go raiḃ siḃ (raḃṫaoi)
go raiḃ sé go raḃaid

The negative particle for this tense is ná: as, Ná raiḃ maiṫ agat. No thanks to you.

329. **Past Tense.**

go mbínn go mbímís
go mbíṫeá go mbíoḋ siḃ)
go mbíoḋ sé go mbídís

The negative particle is nár.

Autonomous Form.

go raḃṫar! may (they) be! (for once).
go mbítear! „ „ (generally).

Verbal Noun.

ḃeiṫ, to be.

330. Phrases containing the Verb Noun.

Is féidir liom (a)[3] ḃeiṫ	I can be, &c.
Ní féidir liom (a) ḃeiṫ	I cannot be, &c.
Tig leat (a) ḃeiṫ	You can be, &c.
Ní ṫig leat (a) ḃeiṫ	You cannot be, &c
Caiṫfiḋ sé ḃeiṫ	He must be, &c.
Caiṫfiḋ mé ḃeiṫ	I must be, &c.
Ní fuláir go raiḃ tú Is cosṁail go raiḃ tú Níor b'ḟéidir nó ḃí tú	You must have been, &c.
Ní cosṁail go raiḃ mé Ní fuláir naċ raiḃ mé	I must not have been, &c.
Is cóir ḋom (a) ḃeiṫ	I ought to be.
Ní cóir duit (a) ḃeiṫ	You ought not to be.
Buḋ ċóir ḋó ḃeiṫ	He ought to have been.
Nior ċóir ḋom (a) ḃeiṫ	I ought not to have been.
Buḋ ṁaiṫ liom (a) ḃeiṫ ann	I wish I were there.
Ba ṁaiṫ liom go raiḃ mé ann	I wish I had been there.
Tá sé le ḃeiṫ ann	He is to be there.

331. The forms fuilim and raḃas are used—

(1) After the particles ní, not; cá, where? an (or a), whether? go, that; and naċ or ná, that (conj.) … not.

(2) After the relative particle a, when it is preceded by a preposition, after the relative a when it means "what," "all that," "all which," and after the negative

relative naċ, who … not, which … not. Cá ḃ-fuil sé? Where is it? Ní ḟuil a ḟios agam. I don't know. Tá ḟios agam ná fuil sé ann. I know it is not there. Deir sé go ḃfuil sé slán. He says that he is well. Sin é an fear naċ ḃfuil ag obair. That is the man who is not working. Duḃairt sé liom naċ raiḃ sé ann. He told me he was not there.

332. We sometimes find the verb fuil eclipsed after the negative ní, not; as, ní ḃfuil sé he is not

For the use of the Relative Form refer to pars. 554–560.

THE ASSERTIVE VERB IS.

333. The position of a verb in an Irish sentence is at the very beginning; hence, when a word other than the verb is to be brought into prominence, the important word is to be placed in the most prominent position viz., at the beginning of the sentence, under cover of an *unemphatic impersonal* verb. There is no stress on the verb so used; it merely denotes that prominence is given to some idea in the sentence other than that contained in the verb. There is a similar expedient adopted in English: thus, "He was speaking of you," and, "It is of you he was speaking." In Irish there is a special verb for this purpose, and of this verb there are forms to be used in principal clauses and forms to be used in dependent clauses—*e.g.*:

Is mise an fear. I am the man.

Deirim gur ab é Seaġán an fear. I say John is the man.

334. Forms of the Assertive Verb.

(*a*) *In Principal Sentences.*

Present Tense, is. **Relative,** is or as.

Past Tense, ba.

[Future Simple, buḋ. **Relative,** ḃus].

Secondary Future or **Conditional**, baḋ.

Subjunctive, ab; sometimes ba.

Subjunc. Pres. (*with* go) go mba, gurab; (*with* ná) nárab, nára.

Subjunc. Past. dá mbaḋ, *"if it were."*

335. Present Tense.

is mé, I am; or, it is I.	is sinn, we are, it is we.
is tú, thou art, it is you.	is siḃ, you are, it is you.
is é he is, it is he. is í, she is, it is she.	is iad, they are, it is they.

336. Past Tense.

ba mé,	I was, it was I.
ba ṫú,	thou wast, &c.
dob' é, b' é, ba h-é,	he was, &c.
dob' í, b' í, ba h-é	she was, &c.
ba sinn,	we were, &c.
ba siḃ,	you were, &c.
dob' iad, b' iad, ba h-iad	they were, &c.

Buḋ or ḃus is never used in the spoken language, and scarcely ever in writing, except when a superlative adjective or adverb occurs in a sentence, the verbs of which are in the Future Tense.

337. **In the Present Tense the verb** IS **is omitted after all particles except** MÁ, if: as, Is mé an fear. I am the man; Ní mé an fear. I am not

the man.

338. **In the Past Tense** BA **is usually omitted after particles when the word following** BA **begins with a consonant:** as, Ar ṁaiṫ leat an áit? Did you like the place? Nár ḃeag an luaċ é? Was it not a small price? Ba is not usually omitted when the following word begins with a vowel or f, but the a is elided: as, Níor ḃ' é sin an sagart. That was not the priest. Notice that the word immediately after ba or baḋ, even when ba or baḋ is understood, is usually aspirated when possible.

(*b*) *In Dependent Sentences.*

339. **Present Tense.**—Ab is used instead of is after gur, meaning "that"; as, measaim gurab é sin an fear. I think that is the man. Before a consonant ab is usually omitted; as, deir sé gur mise an fear. He says that I am the man. Ab is always omitted after naċ, that … not. Saoilim naċ é sin an rí. I think that is not the king.

340. **Past Tense.**—The word ba or baḋ becomes ḃ' in dependent sentences and is usually joined to the particle which precedes it. When the following word begins with a consonant the ḃ' is usually omitted. Measaim gurḃ é seo an teaċ. I think that this was the house; measann sé nár ṁaiṫ le Niall ḃeiṫ annso. He thinks that Niall did not like to be here. An measann tú gur ṁaiṫ an sgeul é? Do you think that it was a good story?

341. **Conditional.**—In dependent sentences ba or baḋ becomes mba. Saoilim go mba ṁaiṫ leis dul leat. I think he would like to go with you. Deir sé naċ mba ṁaiṫ leis. He says that he would not like. In the spoken language the tendency is to use the past tense forms in

dependent sentences; hence Irish speakers would say gur ṁaiṫ in the above sentence instead of go mba ṁaiṫ, and nár ṁaiṫ instead of nać mba ṁaiṫ.

The *Future* is never used in dependent sentences in the spoken language.

BEIR, BEAR or CARRY.

342. Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
beir	beurfad	beiṙṫe	breiṫ

This verb is conjugated like buail, except in the Past, Future and Conditional.

343. Past Tense.

rugas, rugais, &c., like ṁolas (par. 264).

The prefixes do and ro were not used before this Past Tense in early usage and not generally in present-day usage.

344. Future.

beurfad, beurfair, &c., like molfad (par. 265).

In early modern usage there was no f in this Tense, or in the Conditional. The rule was that when a short vowel in the Present became long in the Future stem no f was added. This rule is still observed in the Futures ending in -óċad or -eoċad.

Conditional.

ḃeurfainn, &c., like ṁolfainn (par. 266).

Verbal Noun breiṫ, gen. breiṫe or beiṙṫe.

345. This verb is of very frequent use in the idiom "beir ar"; *lay hold on, catch, overtake*; *e.g.*, rugaḋ orm, I was caught. Ní ḟuil breiṫ air. There is no laying hold on him (or it).

TAḂAIR, GIVE or BRING.

Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
taḃair	ḃeurfad tiuḃrad taḃarfad	taḃarṫa tugṫa	taḃairt

346. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.	—	taḃraimís, tugaimís (taḃram)
2.	taḃair	taḃraiḋ
3.	taḃraḋ or tugaḋ sé	taḃraidís, tugaidís (or -adaois)

Autonomous, taḃarṫar, tugṫar.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

347. **Present Tense.**

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
SING. 1.	(do-) ḃeirim	taḃraim
2.	(do-) ḃeirir	taḃrair,
3.	(do-) ḃeir(-eann) sé	taḃrann sé
PLUR. 1.	(do-) ḃeirimíd	taḃraimíd
2.	(do-) ḃeireann siḃ	taḃrann siḃ
3.	(do-) ḃeirid	taḃraid

tugaim, &c. (like molaim), may be used in both constructions.

Autonomous, (do-)ḃeirṫear, taḃarṫar or tugtar.

348. **By the "Dependent Form" of the Verb we mean that form which is used after the following Particles,** viz., ní, not; an, whether; naċ, whether … not; or who, which or that … not; go, that; cá, where, muna, unless; dá, if; and the relative when governed by a preposition.

349. **Imperfect Tense.**

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(do-)ḃeirinn	taḃrainn
(do-)ḃeirṫeá	&c., like d'ḟuagrainn (305)
&c., like ḃuailinn (262)	

Or, ṫugainn, ṫugṫa, &c., for both *absolute* and *dependent* constructions.

Autonomous, beirtí, taḃarṫaoi, tugtaoi.

Past Tense.

350. The Past Tense has only one form: ṫugas, ṫugais, &c., like ṁolas (264). **Auton** tugaḋ.

In early usage this Past Tense did not take do or ro, as go d-tugas, "that I gave." In present-day usage this peculiarity is sometimes adhered to and sometimes not.

351. **Future Tense.**

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(do-)ḃeurfad &c., like molfad (265)	tiuḃrad, tioḃrad tiubrair, tioḃrair tiubraiḋ sé

taḃarfad, &c., may be used in both constructions.

Autonomous, ḃeurfar taḃarfar

352. **Conditional.**

(do-)ḃeurfainn&c., like ṁolfainn (266) tiuḃrainn, tioḃrainn
tiuḃarṫá, tioḃarṫá
&c.

taḃarfainn, &c., may be used in both constructions.

Autonomous, ḃéarfaí, taḃarfaí.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

This Mood occurs only in dependent construction.

353. **Present**—tugad, tugair, tugaiḋ sé, &c., or taḃrad, taḃrair, &c.

354. **Past**—tugainn, &c., like molainn (268).

Verbal Noun.

taḃairt, gen. taḃarṫa.

355. ABAIR, SAY.

Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
abair	deurfad / abróċad	ráiḋte	ráḋ

356. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1.	—	abraimís (abram)
2.	abair	abraiḋ
3.	abraḋ sé	abraidís, abradaois

357. **Present Tense.**

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1.	(a)deirim	abraim
2.	(a)deirir	abrair
3.	(a)deir or deireann sé	abrann sé (abair)
1.	(a)deirimíd	abraimíd
2.	(a)deirṫí	abrann siḃ
3.	(a)deirid	abraid
Autonomous,	(a)deirtear	abarṫar

The initial a of adeirim, &c., is now usually dropped. The same remark holds for the other tenses. The d of deirim, &c., is not usually aspirated by a foregoing particle. The absolute and dependent constructions are sometimes confused in spoken usage.

358. **Imperfect Tense.**

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1.	adeirinn	abrainn
2.	adeirṫeá	abarṫá
3.	adeireaḋ sé	abraḋ sé
	&c.	&c.
Autonomous,	adeirtí	abarṫaoi

359. **Past Tense.**

aduḃras, aduḃart	duḃras, duḃart
aduḃrais	duḃrais
aduḃairt sé	duḃairt sé
aduḃramar	duḃramar
aduḃraḃar	duḃraḃar
aduḃradar	duḃradar

Autonomous, (a)duḃraḋ or (a)duḃarṫas

360. **Future Tense.**

	deurfad	abróċad
	deurfair	abróċair
	deurfaiḋ sé	abróċaiḋ sé
Autonomous,	déarfar	abróċṫar

In the spoken language the absolute and dependent forms are often confused.

361. **Conditional.**

	deurfainn	abróċainn
	deurfá	abróċṫá
	deurfaḋ sé	abróċaḋ sé
Autonomous,	déarfaí	abróċṫaí

In spoken language the two constructions are often confused.

362. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, abrad, abrair, abraiḋ sé, &c.

Past, abrainn, abarṫá, abraḋ sé, &c.

363. **Participles.**

ráiḋte, ion-ráiḋte, do-ráiḋte, so-ráiḋte

Verbal Noun.

rád or ráḋa, gen. sing, and nom. plur. ráiḋte

GAḂ, TAKE.

364. **Principal Parts.**

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
gaḃ	{ geaḃad / geoḃad	gaḃta	gaḃáil

This verb is regular except in the Future and Conditional.

365. **Future.**

geoḃad, geoḃair, geoḃaiḋ sé, &c.

366. **Conditional.**

ġeoḃainn, ġeoḃtá, ġeoḃaḋ sé, &c.

367. In the spoken language the Future is often made gaḃfad, &c., and the Conditional, ġaḃfainn, as in regular verbs.

Verbal Noun.

gaḃáil or gaḃál, gen. sing, and nom. plural gaḃála.

FAĠ, GET, FIND.

368. **Principal Parts.**

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
faġ	{ ġeoḃad / ġeaḃad	faġta	faġáil

369. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1.	—	faġaimís
2.	faġ	faġaiḋ
3.	faġaḋ sé	faġaidís

INDICATIVE MOOD.

370 **Present Tense.**

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(do-)ġeiḃim	faġaim
(do-)ġeiḃir	faġair
(do-)ġeiḃeann sé, ġeiḃ sé	faġann sé
(do-)ġeiḃmíd	faġaimíd
(do-)ġeiḃeann siḃ	faġann siḃ
(do-)ġeiḃid	faġaid
Autonomous, (do-)ġeiḃṫear	faġtar

In spoken usage faġaim, &c., is used in both dependent and absolute constructions.

In the Auton. faġtar, faiġtear and faċtar are used.

371. **Imperfect Tense**.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(do-)ġeiḃinn	faġainn
(do-)ġeiḃṫeá	faġtá
&c.	&c.

Autonomous, ġeiḃṫí, faġtaoi, faiġtí.

Spoken usage, Absolute, ġeiḃinn or faġainn, &c.

372. **Past Tense.**

This Tense has only one form for both absolute and dependent constructions. The prefixes do and ro are not used with it.

SINGULAR	PLURAL.
1. fuaras	fuaramar
2. fuarais	fuaraḃar
3. fuair sé	fuaradar

Autonomous, friṫ, fuarṫas or fuaraḋ.

In spoken usage friṫ often becomes friṫeaḋ.

373. **Future Tense.**

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1.	ġeoḃad, ġeaḃad	ḃfuiġead or ḃfaiġead
2.	ġeoḃair, &c.	ḃfuiġir &c.
3.	ġeoḃaiḋ sé	ḃfuiġiḋ sé
1.	ġeoḃaimíd	ḃfuiġimíd
2.	ġeoḃaiḋ siḃ	ḃfuiġiḋ siḃ
3.	ġeoḃaid	ḃfuiġid

Autonomous, { ġeoḃṫar / ġeaḃṫar } { fuiġṫear / faiġṫear }

374. **Conditional.**

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
ġeoḃainn or ġeaḃainn	ḃfuiġinn or ḃfaiġinn
ġeoḃṫá, &c.	ḃfuiġir, &c.
ġeoḃaḋ sé	ḃfuiġeaḋ sé
ġeoḃaimís	ḃfuiġimís
ġeoḃaḋ siḃ	ḃfuiġeaḋ siḃ
ġeoḃaidís	ḃfuiġidís
Autonomous, { ġeoḃṫaí / ġeaḃṫaí	{ fuiġṫí / faiġṫí

375. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present, faġad, faġair, faġaiḋ sé, &c.

Past, faġainn, faġtá, faġaḋ sé, &c.

376. **Participle.**

faġta, faiġte or faċta.

The derivative participles of this verb are usually formed from the genitive of the verbal noun.

ion-ḟaġála, so-ḟaġála, do-ḟaġála.

377. DEUN, DO, MAKE.

Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
deun	deunfad	deunta	deunaṁ

378. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1.	—	deunaimís
2.	deun	deunaiḋ
3.	deunaḋ sé	deunaidís

Autonomous, deuntar.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

379. Present Tense.

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1.	(do-) ġním (ġniḋim)	deunaim
2.	„ ġnír &c.	deunair
3.	„ ġní sé or ġníonn sé	deunann sé
1.	„ ġnímíd	deunaimíd
2.	„ ġníṫí	deunann siḃ
3.	„ ġníd	deunaid
Relative,	ġníos, ġniḋeas	
Autonomous,	ġníṫear	deuntar

In present-day usage deunaim, &c., are very frequently used in the Absolute construction.

380. **Imperfect Tense.**

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
do-ġnínn, ġniḋinn	deunainn
„ ġníṫeá, &c.	deunta
„ ġníoḋ sé	deunaḋ sé
„ ġnímís	deunaimís
„ ġníoḋ siḃ	deunaḋ siḃ
„ ġnídís	deunaidís
Autonomous, do-ġníṫí	deuntaoi

381. **Past Tense.**

do-rinneas	deárnas
„ rinnis, &c.	deárnais
„ rinne sé	deárna sé
„ rinneamar	deárnamar
„ rinneaḃar	deárnaḃar
„ rinneadar	deárnadar
Autonomous, do-rinneaḋ	deárnaḋ

In Munster dialect deineas, ḋeinis, ḋein sé, ḋeineamar, deineaḃar, and ḋeineadar are used as the Past Tense in *both* absolute and dependent constructions.

382. **Future Tense.**

ABSOLUTE AND DEPENDENT.

deunfad	deunfaimíd
deunfair	deunfaiḋ siḃ
deunfaiḋ sé	deunfaid

Autonomous, deunfar

383. **Conditional.**

ḋeunfainn ḋeunfaimís
ḋeunfá ḋeunfaḋ siḃ
ḋeunfaḋ sé ḋeunfaidís

Autonomous, deunfaí

384. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

deunad deunair deunaiḋ sé deunamaoid, &c.

Past.

deunainn deuntá deunaḋ sé deunamaois, &c.

Participles.

deunta ion-deunta so-ḋeunta do-ḋeunta

Verbal Noun.

deunaṁ (deunaḋ) gen. deunta

385. FEIC, SEE.

Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
feic	ċífead / feicfead	feicṫe	feicsint

386. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1. — feicimís (feiceam)
2. feic feiciḋ
3. feiceaḋ sé feicidís

387. The imperative 2nd sing. and 2nd plural are hardly ever found; for we rarely command or ask a person to "see" anything, except in the sense of "look at" it. In Irish a distinct verb is always used in the sense of "look at," such as feuċ, dearc, breaṫnuiġ, &c. The verb feuċ must not be confounded with feic; it is a distinct verb, and has a complete and regular conjugation.

388. In early modern Irish faic was the stem used in the imperative and in the dependent construction throughout the entire verb.

389. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1.	do-ċím (ċiḋim)	feicim
2.	do-ċír, &c.	feicir
3.	do-ċí sé, ċíonn sé	feiceann sé
1.	do-ċímíd	feicimíd
2.	do-ċíṫí	feiceann siḃ
3.	do-ċíd	feicid
Autonomous,	do-ċítear do-ċíṫear	feicṫear

390. The prefix do-, now usually dropped, is an altered form of the old prefix at—*e.g.*, atċím. This form survives in the spoken language only in the Ulster form, ’tím or tiḋim, &c.

391. **Imperfect Tense.**

1.	do-ċínnm (ċiḋinn)	feicinn
2.	do-ċíṫeá, &c.	feicṫeá
3.	do-ċíoḋ sé	feiceaḋ sé
1.	do-ċímís	feicimís
2.	do-ċíoḋ siḃ	feiceaḋ siḃ
3.	do-ċídís	feicidís

In spoken language feicinn, &c., is used in both Absolute and Dependent constructions.

Ulster usage, tiḋeann, tiḋṫeá, &c.

392. **Past Tense.**

	ABSOLUTE.		DEPENDENT.	
1.	ċonnac ċonnacas	(ċonnarcas)	facas faca	feacas feaca
2.	ċonnacais	(ċonnarcais)	facais	feacais
3.	ċonnaic sé	(ċonnairc sé)	faca sé	feaca sé
1.	ċonnacamar	[ċonnarcamar]	facamar	feacamar
2.	ċonnacaḃar	[ċonnarcaḃar]	facaḃar	feacaḃar
3.	ċonnacadar	[ċonnarcadar]	facadar	feacadar
	Autonomous,	conncas	facas or factas	

The older spelling was atċonnac and atċonnarc, &c. The t is still preserved in the Ulster dialect: ṫanaic me, &c., I saw.

393. **Future Tense.**

(do-)ċífead, ċíḋfead,	feicfead,
(do-)ċífir, ċiḋfir,	feicfir,
&c.	&c.
Autonomous, ċífear	feicfear

394. **Conditional.**

(do-)ċífinn, ċíḋfinn,	feicfinn,
&c.	&c.

In the Future and Conditional feicfead, &c., and feicfinn, &c., can be used in both constructions.

395. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, feicead, feicir, feiciḋ sé, &c.

Past, feicinn, feicṫeá, feiceaḋ sé, &c.

Participle, feicṫe.

396. Verbal Noun.

feicsint, feiscint, gen. feicseana.

From the genitive of the verbal noun the **compound participles** are formed: viz., in-ḟeicseana, so-ḟeicseana, do-ḟeicseana.

397. CLOIS or CLUIN, HEAR.

These two verbs are quite regular except in the Past Tense.

In old writings the particle at or do- is found prefixed to all the tenses in the absolute construction, but this particle is now dropped.

398. **Past Tense.**

ċualas, ċuala	ċualamar
ċualais	ċualaḃar
ċuala sé	ċualadar

Autonomous, ċualaṫas

Verbal Nouns.

clos or cloisint (or more modern cluinsint or cloistin).

TAR, COME.

399. IMPERATIVE.

SING.	1.	—	PLUR. tigimís (tigeam)
	2.	tar	tigiḋ
	3.	tigeaḋ (tagaḋ) sé	tigidís

INDICATIVE MOOD.

400. Present Tense.

1. tigim tigimid
2. tigir tigṫí
3. tig sé tigid

Relative (wanting).

Autonomous, tigṫear.

The Present Tense has also the forms tagaim or teagaim inflected regularly.

401. Imperfect Tense.

ṫiginn, ṫagainn, or teagainn, regularly.

402. Past Tense.

ṫángas, ṫánag	ṫángamar
ṫángais	ṫángaḃar
ṫáinig sé	ṫángadar

403. **Autonomous,** tángas.

The ng in this Tense is not sounded like ng in long, *a ship*, but with a helping vowel between them —*e.g.*, 2nd pers. sing.—is pronounced as if written ṫánagais; but in Munster the g is silent except in the 3rd pers. sing.—*e.g.*, ṫángas is pronounced *haw-nuss*.

404. **Future Tense,** tiocfad, &c., inflected regularly; also spelled tiucfad, &c.

Relative, ṫiocfas

Conditional, ṫiocfainn, &c., inflected regularly.

405. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, tigead, tagad, or teagad, inflected regularly.

Past, tiginn, tagainn, or teagainn, inflected regularly.

406. **Verbal Noun,** teaċt (or tiodaċt, tideaċt)

Participle, teagta or tagta.

407. TÉIĠ, GO.

N.B.—The present stem is also spelled téid, but téiġ is preferable, as it better represents the older form, tiag or téig.

408. IMPERATIVE.

1.	—	téiġimís (téiġeam)
2.	téiġ	téiġid
3.	téiġead sé	téiġidís

409. In the Imperative 2nd sing. and 2nd plur. other verbs are now usually substituted, such as gabh, imtiġ, téiriġ. The use of téiriġ, plur. téiriġid, seems to be confined to these two forms; imtiġ has a full, regular conjugation.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

410.

		Present.	
1.	téiġim (téidim)	1.	téiġimíd
2.	téiġir &c.	2.	téiġtí
3.	téiġ sé, téiġeann sé	3.	téiġid

Autonomous, téiġtear

Imperfect Tense.

téiġinn (or téidinn), &c., regularly.

411. **Past Tense.**

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1.	ċuaḋas	deaċas
2.	ċuaḋais	deaċais
3.	ċuaiḋ sé	deaċaiḋ sé
1.	ċuaḋamar	deaċamar
2.	ċuaḋaḃar	deaċaḃar
3.	ċuaḋadar	deaċadar
Autonomous,	ċuaḋṫas	deaċas

In Munster ċuadas, &c., is used in the dependent construction, as níor ċuaiḋ sé, he did not go. Deaġas, &c., is also used in Munster.

412. **Future.**

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.	raċad, raġad	raċamaoid, raġamaoid
2.	raċair, raġair	raċaiḋ siḃ, raġaiḋ siḃ
3.	raċaiḋ sé, raġaiḋ sé	raċaid, raġaid

Relative, raċas, raġas.

Autonomous, raċṫar, raġṫar.

413. **Conditional.**

raċainn or raġainn, &c., regularly.

The Future and Conditional are sometimes spelled raċfad, &c., and raċfainn, &c.

414. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, téiġead, téiġir, téiġiḋ sé, &c.

Past, téiġinn, téiġṫeá, téiġeaḋ sé, &c.

415. **Verbal Noun.**

dul, gen. dola (sometimes dulta).

Participle of Necessity.

dulta (as, ní dulta ḋó, *he ought not to go*).

Derivative Participles.

ion-dola, so-ḋola, do-ḋola.

416. IṪ, EAT.

This verb is regular except in the Future and Conditional.

Principal Parts.

Imper.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
iṫ	íosad	iṫte	iṫe

417. **Future Tense.**

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.	íosad (íosfad)	íosamaoid
2.	íosair, &c.	íosaiḋ siḃ
3.	íosaiḋ sé	íosaid

Relative, íosas (íosfas).

Autonomous, íostar.

418. **Conditional.**

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.	íosainn (íosfainn)	íosamaois
2.	íostá, &c.	íosaḋ siḃ
3.	íosaḋ sé	íosaidís

419. As well as the regular Past Tense, d'iṫeas, &c., there is another Past Tense, viz., duaḋas, in use.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.	duaḋas	duaḋamar
2.	duaḋais	duaḋaḃar
3.	duaiḋ sé	duaḋadar

RIĠIM, I REACH.

420. This verb is nearly obsolete, its place being taken by the regular verbs sroiċim and sroisim.

Its Past Tense is inflected like tánag.

1.	rángas, ránag	rángamar
2.	rángais	rángaḃar
3.	ráinig sé	rángadar

421. **Verbal Noun.**

roċtain or riaċtain.

Riġim has a special usage in the phrase riġim a leas, *"I need,"* (whence, riaċtanas, need, necessity: riaċtanaċ, necessary: from the verbal noun.)

MARḂAIM or MARḂUIĠIM, I KILL.

422. This verb is quite regular except in Future and Conditional.

Future, maróḃad, marḃóċad, maireóḃad, mairḃeóċad or muirḃfead (with usual terminations).

Conditional, ṁaróḃainn, ṁarḃóċainn, ṁaireoḃainn, ṁairḃeóċainn or ṁuirḃfinn, &c., &c.

Verbal Noun.

marḃaḋ or marḃuġaḋ, to kill or killing.

SOME DEFECTIVE VERBS.

423. **AR, quoth, say or said. This verb is used only when the exact words of the speaker are given.** (It corresponds exactly with the Latin "*inquit*.") It is frequently written arsa or ars, as arsa mise, said I. When the definite article immediately follows this latter form the s is often joined to the article, as, ars an fear or ar san fear, says the man. "Cia ṫú féin?" ar seisean. "Who are you?" said he.

When the exact words of the speaker are not given translate "says" by deir, and "said" by duḃairt. When the word "*that*" is understood after the English verb "*say*" go (or naċ if "not" follows) *must be expressed in Irish.*

424. **DAR, It seems or it seemed. This verb is always followed by the preposition LE:** as, dar liom, it seems to me, methinks; or, it seemed to me, methought. Dar leat. It seems to you. Dar leis an ḃfear. It seemed to the man.

425. **FEADAR, I know, I knew. This verb is nearly always used negatively or interrogatively,** and although really a past tense has a present meaning as well as a past. Ní ḟeadar. I do, or did, not know. Ní ḟeadair sé. He does not know, or he did not know.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. feadar	1. feadramar
2. feadrair (-ír)	2. feadraḃar
3. feadair sé	3. feadradar

N.B.—The forms just given are those used in the spoken language, the literary forms are: feadar, feadair tú, feadair sé, feadamar, feadaḃar, and feadadar.

426. ṪÁRLA, **There came to pass, it happened or happened to be.** It is also used to express the meeting of one person with another.

427. D'ḞÓBAIR or BA ḊÓBAIR, **"It all but happened."** *E.g.*, d'ḟóbair ḋam tuitim, It all but happened to me to fall, I had like to fall, I had well nigh fallen. The same meaning is expressed by d'ḟóbair go dtuitfinn.

428. FEUDAIM, **I can**, is regular in all its tenses, but it has no imperative mood.

1. ↑ A few of these take te in past participle; as osgail, *open*, osgailte; ceangail, bind, ceangailte. The parts of these verbs [258 c.] which are formed from the past participle will, of course, have slender terminations, *e.g.*, d'osgailteá, *you used to open*.
2. ↑ The early modern form, viz., taoi, is still used in Munster, *e.g.*, Cionnus taoi? (or Cionnus taoi'n tú?) *How are you?*
3. ↑ This a is usually heard in the spoken language

Notes

CHAPTER VI.

The Adverb.

429. There are not many simple adverbs in Irish, the greater number of adverbs being made up of two or more words. **Almost every Irish adjective may become an adverb by having the particle "GO" prefixed to it:** as, maiṫ, good; go maiṫ, well; uṁal, humble; go h-uṁal, humbly.

430. This go is really the preposition go[1] with its meaning of "with." (Do not confound this word with go meaning "*to*," they are two distinct prepositions). Of course this particle has now lost its original meaning in the case of most adverbs.

431. Adverbs may be compared; their comparative and superlative degrees are, however, those of the adjectives from which they are derived; the particle go is not used before the comparative or superlative.

432. It may be well to remark here that when an adjective begins with a vowel go prefixes h, as go h-annaṁ, seldom.

433. The following list may now be regarded as simple adverbs although many of them are disguised compounds.

amaċ — out (used *only* after a verb of motion).

amuiġ, amuiċ — outside, out; never used after a verb of motion. He is out, tá sé amuiġ. He is standing outside the door, tá sé ’na ṡeasaṁ taoḃ amuiġ de ’n doras.

ámṁ, amṁac, ámṁtac, } however.

amṁáin, alone, only.

amṁail, as, like.

amlaiḋ, thus.

anocṫ, to-night.

anois, now.

aréir, last night.

arís(t). again.

cá? where?

ċeana, already, previously.

conus? cionnus? how?

ċoṁ, coṁ, as (*see* par. 154).

feasda, henceforth, at once.

leis, freisin, } also.

fós, yet.

i muḋa, amú, astray (mistaken).

indé (ané), yesterday.

indiu (andiu), to-day.

i mbárac (amárac), to-morrow.

isteac, in (*motion only*).

istiġ, inside (*rest*).

go h-annaṁ, seldom.

go fóill, yet, awhile.

ní (níor), ċa (ċar), (*Ulster*), } not.

nuair, when.

caṫain? caṡoin? } when?

mar, as, like.

mar sin, thus.

Fiú, *even*; as, níor laḃair sé fiú aon ḟocal aṁáin. *He did not speak even one word.* Gan fiú na h-anála do ṫarraing. *Without even taking breath.* Fiú is really a **noun,** and is followed by the **genitive case, whenever the definite article comes between it and the noun; otherwise it is followed by a nominative case.**

434. It may be useful to remark here that the words indiu, *to-day*; indé, *yesterday*; i mbárać, *to-morrow*; aréir, *last night*; anoćt, *to-night*; **can be used only as adverbs.** *He came to-day.* Ṫáinig sé indiu. *He went away yesterday.* D'imṫiġ sé indé. When the English words are **nouns,** we must use an lá (*or* an oiḋće) before indiu, indé, aréir, etc. *Yesterday was fine.* Ḃí an lá indé breáġ. *To-morrow will be wet.* Beiḋ an lá i mbárać fliuć. *Last night was cold.* Ḃí an oiḋće aréir fuar.

435. **Interrogative Words.**

when? caṫain? cé an uair? cé an t-am?

where? cá? cé an áit? conad?

how? conus (cionnus)? cé an ċaoi? go dé mar?

why? cad ’na ṫaoḃ? cad ċuige? cad fáṫ? cé an fáṫ?

how far? cé an ḟaid? } how long? an fada?

which (*pron.*)? cioca? cé?

which (*adj.*)? cé an…?

what? cad? creud? ceurd?

whither? cá?

whence? cad as? cá’r ab as?

how much? cé ṁeud? } how many? an mó?

who? cé? cia? cé h-é (í, iad)?

Up and Down.

436. Up.

suas, upwards, **motion upwards** from the place where the speaker is.

aníos, upwards, **motion up from below** to the place where the speaker is.

ṫuas (also spelled ṡuas), up, **rest above** the place where the speaker is.

aníos (aḃus),[2] up, **rest** where the speaker is.

Down.

síos, downwards, **motion down** from where the speaker is.

anuas, downwards, **motion down from above** to the place where the speaker is.

ṫíos (ṡíos), down, below, **rest below** the place where the speaker is.

anuas (aḃus),[3] down, **rest** where the speaker is.

437. The following examples will fully illustrate the use of the words for “up” and “down”:—

A.

A **B**,	says	to	I'll throw **down**,	it Caiṫfiḋ mé síos é.
			Is it **down** yet?	Ḃfuil sé síos fós?
			Throw it **up,**	Caiṫ aníos é.
			It is **up** now,	Tá sé aníos anois.
B **A**,	says	to	I'll throw it **up**,	Caiṫfiḋ mé suas é.
			Is it **up** yet?	Ḃfuil sé ṫuas fós?
			Throw it **down,**	Caiṫ anuas é.
			It is **down** now.	Tá sé anuas anois.

B.

N.B. —	He is up (*i.e.*, he is not in bed),	Tá sé 'na ṡuiḋe.
	We are up,	Tá sinn 'nár suiḋe

438.

Rest	Motion *from the speaker*	Motion *towards the speaker*	Prepositional use, *this side of*, etc.
i ḃfus, aḃus, this side	anonn	anall	lastḃus de, taoḃ i ḃfus de
ṫall, the other side, yonder	sall	anall	lastall de, taoḃ ṫall de
amuiġ (amuiċ), outside	amaċ	amaċ	leasmuiġ, taoḃ amuiġ de
istiġ, inside	isteaċ	isteaċ	laistiġ, taoḃ istiġ de

Over.

439. The following sentences will exemplify the translation of the word “over”:—

A._____B.

A says to **B**,	I'll throw it **over** to you,	Caiṫfiḋ mé anonn ċugat é.
„	Is it **over** yet?	Ḃfuil sé ṫall fós?
„	Throw it **over** to me,	Caiṫ anall ċugam é.
„	It is **over** now,	Tá sé aḃus anois.
He went **over** the wall.		Ċuaiḋ sé ṫar an mballa.
He went **over** to Scotland.		Ċuaiḋ sé anonn go h-Albain.
He came **over** from Scotland.		Ṫáinig sé anall ó Albain.

North, South. East, West.

The root oir means *front*: iar means *back*.

440. The ancients faced the rising sun in naming the points of the compass; hence ṪOIR, east; ṪIAR, west; ṪUAIḊ, north; ṪEAS, south.

441.

Rest	Motion *from the speaker* towards the	Motion *towards the speaker* from the	Prepositional use, *east of, west of, north of, south of,*
ṫoir, east	soir	anoir	[4]lastoir de; ar an taoḃ ṫoir de; dia[5]ṫoir de
ṫiar, west	siar	aniar	[4]laistiar de; ar an taoḃ ṫiar de; dia ṫiar de
ṫuaiḋ, north	ó ṫuaiḋ	adtuaiḋ	[4]lastuaiḋ de; ar an taoḃ ṫuaiḋ de; dia ṫuaiḋ de
ṫeas, south	ó ḋeas	andeas	[4]laisteas de; ar an

			taoḃ ṫeas de; dia ṫeas de

442. The noun “north,” etc., is AN TAOḂ ṪUAIḊ, AN TAOḂ ṪEAS, etc., or tuaisceart, deisceart, iarṫar, and oirṫear. These latter words are obsolescent.

443.

The	**North**	wind,	an ġaoṫ	adtuaiḋ	**N.W.** wind,	gaoṫ aniar adtuaiḋ
„	**South**	„	„	andeas	**S.E.** wind,	gaoṫ anoir andeas
„	**East**	„	„	anoir	etc.,	etc.
„	**West**	„	„	aniar	Notice the change of position in Irish.	

444. With reference to a house, siar is *inwards*; soir is *outwards*.

445. Compound or Phrase Adverbs.

i gcéin, far off (*space*).

i ḃfad, far off (*space and time*).

ar ais, back.

ar gcúl, backwards.

ar dtús, ar dtúis, at first, *or* in the beginning.

annso, here.

ann san (sain, sin), there, then.

do ṡíor, always.

ar aon ċor, i n-aon ċor, ar biṫ, at all.

ċor ar biṫ,

ċor leis sin, moreover.

ar aon ċuma, ar ċuma ar biṫ, at any rate.

pé sgéal é, pé rud é, however, at any rate.

i n-aisge, gratis.

i dtaisge, in safe

i gcoṁnuiḋe, } keeping.

ċoiḋċe, ever (*future*).

i n-aisdeas, in vain.

riaṁ, ever (*past*).

tuille eile, tuille fós, } moreover, besides.

go deo, for ever.

i leiṫ, apart, aside.

go bráṫ(aċ), for ever.

cad as? cá h-as? } whence?

fé (*or* fá) ḋó, twice.

cé ṁeud? cá ṁeud? } how much? how many?

fé (*or* fá) ṫrí, thrice.

fé (*or* fá) ṡeaċ, by turns.

an mó? de ló, by day.

i láṫair, present.

as láṫair, absent.

de láṫair, presently, just now.

ist' oiḋċe, } by night.

beag naċ,

naċ mór, } almost.

geall le,

go léir,

go h-iomlán, } entirely.

d’oiḋċe,

ó ċéile,

ó n-a ċéile, } asunder.

i n-éinḟeaċt, together.

fé ṫuairim, conjecturally.

eaḋon (*written* .i.),	namely.
ó ċianaiḃ,	awhile ago.
ó ċiantaiḃ,	ages ago.
go leor,	enough
d’ár ndóiġ (dóiċ),	sure, surely.
do ġeit,	immediately, instantly.
i gcéadóir,	
lom-láiṫreaċ,	
láiṫreaċ bonn,	
ar an dtoirt,	
ar uairiḃ,	sometimes.
uaireannta,	
anois 7 arís,	
go h-áiriġṫe,	especially.
go sonráḋaċ,	
go mórṁór,	
go h-urṁór,	
ar ball,	by and bye, after awhile.
dála an sgéil *or* dálta siúd,	by the bye.
i n-áirde,	on high.

cosanáirde,	at full gallop.
go deiṁin *or* go dearḃṫa,	indeed.
go deiṁin is go dearḃṫa,	really and truly.
ambriaṫar ’s ambasa,	
dá ríriḃ,	really, in fact.
mar an gcéadna,	likewise, in like manner.
ó ṡoin i leiṫ,	from that time to this.
ó ṡoin amaċ,	from that time out.
ar éigin,	hardly, with difficulty, perforce.

an ċuid is mó ḋe, ar (a) iomad,	at most.
an ċuid is luġa ḋe, ar a laġad (laiġead),	at least.
ar a ṡon san (is uile),	notwithstanding (all that).
ċoṁ ḟada ’s (*use* le *before noun*) an ḟaid (*rel. form of verb*)	whilst, as long as.
d’ aon ġnó,	purposely.
ċoṁ maiṫ agus dá,	just as if.
le h-éirġe an lae,	at dawn.
gan coinne le, gan súil le,	unexpectedly.
de ġnáṫ (ġnáṫaċ),	usually.
mar atá, mar atáid,	namely, viz., *i.e.*
ós ísiol,	secretly, lowly.
ós árd,	aloud, openly.
ar maidin,	in the morning.
sa tráṫnóna, um tráṫnóna,	in the evening.

ar maidin indiu,	this morning.
ar ṁaidin i mbáraċ,	to-morrow morning.
sa tráṫnóna indiu,	this evening.
aṫrugaḋ indé,	on the day before yesterday
aṫrugaḋ i mbáraċ,	on the day after to-morrow.
anoirṫear, umánoirṫear,	
lá ar n-a ḃáraċ,	on the following day.
i mbliaḋna,	(*during*) this year.
anuraiḋ,	(*during*) last year.
aṫruġaḋ anuraiḋ,	(*during*) the year before last

446. **The phrases which have just been given about morning, evening, &c., are strictly adverbial, and cannot be used as nouns.**

447.

Adverbs.		Nouns.	
dia Ḋoṁnaiġ,	on Sunday	Doṁnaċ, m.,	Sunday
dia Luain,	on Monday	Luan, m.,	Monday
dia Máirt,	on Tuesday	Máirt, f.,	Tuesday
dia Ceudaoin’,	on Wednesday	Ceudaoin, f.,	Wednesday
dia Ḋardaoin’,	on Thursday	Dardaoin, f.,	Thursday
dia h-Aoine,	on Friday	Aoine, f.,	Friday
dia Saṫairn,	on Saturday	Saṫarn, m.,	Saturday

448. DIA **takes the name of the day in the genitive case;** it is used only when “on” is, or may be, used in English—*i.e.*, when the word is adverbial.

Dia is really an old word for day. It occurs in the two expressions i n-diu, to-day; i n-dé, yesterday. It is now never used except before the names of the days of the week, and in the two expressions just mentioned.

449. **“Head-foremost.”**

He fell head-foremost,	Do ṫuit sé i ndiaiḋ[6]a ċinn.
I fell head-foremost,	Do ṫuiteas i ndiaiḋ mo ċinn.
She fell head-foremost,	Do ṫuit sí i ndiaiḋ a cinn.
They fell head-foremost,	Do ṫuiteadar i ndiaiḋ a gcinn.

However.

However followed in English by an adjective or an adverb is translated into Irish by the preposition do (*or* de), the possessive adjective a, and an **abstract noun** corresponding to the English adjective or adverb.

However good, d'á ḟeaḃas.	However long, d'á ḟaid.
However great, d'á ṁéid.	However violent, d'á éigniġe.
However high, d'á aoirde.	However young, d'á óige

The Adverb "The."

The sooner the better,
- d’á luaiṫe ’seaḋ (is aṁlaiḋ) is fearr.
- ní’l dá luaiṫe naċ aṁlaiḋ (eaḋ) is fearr.
- d’á luaiṫeaċt is fearrde.

The longer … the bolder, d’á ḟaid ’seaḋ is dána.

The sooner … the less, d’á luaiṫe ’seaḋ is luġa.

1. ↑ This preposition is now used only in a few phrases; as míle go leiṫ, a mile and (*with*) a half: slat go leiṫ, a yard and a half: bliaḋain go leiṫ ó ṡoin, a year and a half ago.
2. ↑ This form is used in Ulster and North Connaught, but generally this word is used only for rest on this side of a room, river, &c., or here, where we are.
3. ↑ See foot-note at end of page 160.
4. ↑ 4.04.14.24.3 Leas or las may be used.
5. ↑ Probably a corruption of i dtaoḃ.
6. ↑ indiaiḋ is a phrase meaning “after,” and is followed by a genitive case.

Notes

CHAPTER VII.

Prepositions.

450. The following list contains the simple prepositions in use in modern Irish:—

i, a, in, (ann) in.

ag, (aig), at.

ar, (air), on.

as, out of.

dar, by (*in swearing*).

de, off, from.

do, to.

fé, faoi, fó, fá, under.

gan, without.

go, to (*motion*).

roiṁ, before.

idir, between.

le, with.

ó, from.

ṫar, tar, } over, across.

tré, tríd, through.

um, im, concerning, about.

CHAPTER VIII.

Conjunctions.

451. The following is a list of the conjunctions in use at present:—

de ḃríġ go
faoi ráḋ ’s go, cion is, cion is go, } because.

aċt, but, except.

agus (a’s, is, ’s), and.

idir … agus, both … and.

an (ar), whether (*interrog.*)

ar a ṡon go, siúd is go, } although.

ciḋ, giḋ,

má, dá, if.

muna, mura, if … not.

gideaḋ, however.

ċor leis sin, rud eile (ḋe) tuille fós, } moreover.

tuille eile,

mar, as.

ná, than; nor.

go (gur), that.

mar is go, as though.

cé go, gid go, go, nó go, acht go, until (*with verbs*).

go dtí go, comh luat as, dá luas 7, an túisge go, as soon as.

fós, yet, still.

sul; sar, before.

i dtreo go (nach), ar nós go (nach), ar mhod go (nach), i gcás go (nach), so that (not).

ar chor go (nach), ar dóigh go (nach), i gcaoi go (nach), ionnus go (nach),[1]

seachas, compared with.

nó, or.

sul a dtí, } ó, since, because.

sul má dtí, } ó naċ, since … not.

sul dá dtí, óir, for, because.

maiseaḋ, well, if so.

ó ṫárla go, whereas.

uime sin, therefore, wherefore.

tar ċeann, moreover, besides, furthermore.

ar an áḋbar sain, therefore.

mar sin féin, even so.

naċ } that … not.

ná, ná go,

bíoḋ go, although, whether … or.

452. In Munster “that.. not” is usually translated by NÁ followed by the dependent form of the verb. NÁ **neither aspirates nor eclipses.** In the past tense it becomes nár which causes aspiration. Whenever **“that … not”** follows a negative (or a *virtual* negative) phrase, ná go is used (ná gur in the past tense).

Tá ḟios aige féin ná fuil an ceart aige. He knows himself that he is not right.

Ní deirim (*or* ḋeirim) ná go ḃfuil an ceart aige. I don't say that he is not right.

Náċ is used in Munster as a part of the verb is.

453. **The use of** MAR **before a clause** is noteworthy.

fá mar aduḃairt sé, (according) as he said.
ṫar mar ḃí sé deiċ mbliaḋna fiċead ó ṡoin.
Beyond (or compared with) how it was 30 years ago.
i dtaoḃ mar deir tú, regarding what you say.
Ṫáinig sé mar a raiḃ Fionn. He came to where Finn was.
mar atá or mar atáid, that is, viz., *i.e.*
mar go mbaḋ iad féin do ḋeunaṁ an gníoṁa, as if it were they who performed the act.
mar an gceudna, likewise.
mar ġeall ar, on account of.

1. ↑ Go and naċ are very frequently separated from ionnus by a subordinate or relative clause: *e.g.*, “ionnus, an tí ar a mbiaḋ an riġin sin, go mbiaḋ tearmann aige ó’n oirleaċ;” *so that the person who would be marked with that sign would have protection from the slaughter*.

Notes

454. **Interjections and Interjectional Phrases.**

A,	O (the sign of the Vocative case).
Éist,	hush! list!
Fóiríor!	Alas!
Fairíor!	
Mo ḃrón!	
Mo ċreaċ!	
Mo léan!	
Mo léan geur!	
Feuċ!	Behold! lo!
Ó bú bú! oċ! uċ! uċón!	Alas!
Mo náire ṫú!	Shame on you!
… a bú!	Hurrah for…!
Fáilte róṁat!	Welcome!

Dia do ḃeaṫa!	Hail!
’Sé do ḃeaṫa!	
Slán leat (liḃ)!	Good-bye!
Slán beo agat (agaiḃ)!	
Beannaċt leat (liḃ)!	
Dia linn!	God be with us!
Maiseaḋ!	Well! Musha!
Foiġid (foiġne)!	Patience!
Faire!	Take care! Fie!
Go dtéiḋ tú slán!	Safe home!
Go soirḃiġiḋ Dia ḋuit!	God prosper you!
Bí ’do ṫost!	Silence!
Éist do ḃeul!	
Mo ġoirm ṫú!	Bravo!
Súd ort!	Good health!
Sláinte!	
Maiṫ an fear!	Good man!
	Good fellow!

Maiṫ an buaċaill!	
Buiḋeaċas leat!	Thanks! thank you!
Go raiḃ maiṫ agat!	
Go n-éiriġiḋ áḋ leat!	Good luck to you!
Nár léigiḋ Dia sin!	God forbid!
Go mbeannuiġiḋ Dia duit!	God save you! Good morning! &c.
Go mairir	Long life to you!
Go mairiḋ tú!	
Go ḃfóirid Dia orainn!	God help us!
Oiḋċe ṁaiṫ ḋuit!	May you have a good night!
Go dtugaiḋ Dia oiḋċe ṁaiṫ ḋuit!	May God give you a good night!

Go mbuaḋaiḋ Dia leat!	God grant you success!
Slán codalta na h-oiḋċe agat!	Sound night's sleep to you!
Go gcodlair go sáṁ!	May you sleep peacefully.
Bail ó Ḋia ort!	God bless you!
Cuideaċan Dé leat!	May God accompany you!
Fad saoġail agat!	Long life to you !
Buaiḋ leat!	Success to you!
Raṫ go raiḃ ort!	
'Seaḋ!	Well!
'Seaḋ anois!	There now!
Cogar i leiṫ!	Whisper (here)!
Ambasa!	Indeed!
Mo ġraiḋin croiḋe ṫu!	Bravo!
A ċuid!	My dear!
Aċ aiḋe!	Dear me!

CHAPTER X.

WORD-BUILDING.

Prefixes.

455. The following is a list of the principal prefixes used in Irish. Some of them have double forms owing to the rule caol le caol.

ais or éis, back, again; like the English *re-*;

íoc, payment; aisíoc, repayment, restitution.

aṁ	or aiṁ,			réiḋ, even; aiṁréiḋ, uneven.
an	„ ain,			tráṫ, time; i n-antráṫ, untimely.
dí	„ dío,[1]	}	Negative particles {	ceann, a head; díċeannaḋ, to behead.
mí	„ mío,			coṁairle, an advice; míoċoṁairle, an evil advice.
neaṁ	„ neiṁ,			niḋ, a thing; neiṁniḋ, nothing, non-entity.
	eas,			cáirdeas, friendship; easċáirdeas, enmity.

é or éa, a negative particle. It eclipses c and t and becomes éag before s. Cóir, just; éagcóir,

unjust; trom, heavy; éadtrom, light; cosṁail, like; eugsaṁail, different.

droċ, bad, evil; meas, esteem; droċ-ṁeas, reproach, disesteem.

coṁ, equal; aimsir, time; coṁ-aimsearaċ, contemporary.

an, mór, big; an-ṁór, very big.

il, iol, ró, sár, lán, Intensifying particles: dat, a colour; ioldatać, many-coloured. mór, big; ró-ṁór, too big. te, warm; sár-te, excessively warm. aidbéil, vast; lán-aidbéil, awfully vast.

úr, gránda, ugly; úr-ġránda, very ugly.

leat, a half; leat-uair, half an hour; sgeul, a story; leit-sgeul, an excuse.

in, ion, fit, suitable; deunta, done; in-deunta, fit to be done; ráidte, said; ion-ráidte, fit to be said;

ion-ṁolta, praiseworthy; ion-ólta, drinkable; in-iṫte, eatable, edible. (See pars. 286, 288.)

reuṁ, before; ráiḋte, said; reuṁ-ráiḋte, aforesaid.

friṫ, back; friṫ-ṫeaċt, coming and going; friṫ-ḃualaḋ, palpitation, or a return stroke.

ban, a feminine prefix; flaiṫ, a prince; ban-ḟlaiṫ, a princess; bain-tiġearna, a lady.

aṫ, a reiterative particle: ráḋ, a saying; aṫ-ráḋ, a repetition; aṫuair, another time; an aṫbliaḋain, next year; an aṫṡeaċtṁain, next week. Aṫ has sometimes the force of "dis" in dismantle, as cumaḋ, to form; aṫċumaḋ, to deform, destroy; ríoġaḋ, to crown, to elect a king; aṫríoġaḋ, to dethrone.

biṫ, bioṫ, lasting, constant; buan, lasting; bioṫ-ḃuan, everlasting; biṫ-ḟíreun, ever-faithful.

do and so, two particles which have directly opposite meanings, as have often the letters d and s. Do denotes *difficulty, ill*, or the *absence of some good quality*; so denotes the opposite.

do-ḋeunta, hard to be done	so-ḋeunta, easy to be done
dólás, sorrow	sólás, comfort, joy
donas, bad-luck	sonas, good-luck
duḃaċ, sad	suḃaċ, merry
daiḋḃir, poor	saiḋḃir, rich
daoi, a fool	saoi a wise man
díṫ, want, misery	síṫ, peace, plenty
duḃailce, vice	suḃailce, virtue
daor, condemned, dear	saor, free, cheap
doċar, harm	soċar, profit
dona, unlucky, unhappy	sona, lucky, happy
doineann, bad weather	soineann, fine weather
docaṁail, inconvenient	socaṁail, convenient

456. **Affixes or Terminations.**

aċ, when it is the termination of an adjective, means full of, abounding in: briaṫar, a word; briaṫraċ, wordy, talkative; feuraċ, grassy.

aċ, when it is the termination of a noun, denotes a person or personal agent: as Éireannaċ, an Irishman;

Albanaċ; a Scotchman.

aċt is an abstract termination, like the English *-ness*: milis, sweet; milseaċt, sweetness.

N.B.—The termination -aċt is usually added to adjectives.

aiḋe, uiḋe, iḋe, are personal terminations denoting an agent: sgeul, a story; sgeuluiḋe, a storyteller; cos, a foot; coisiḋe, a pedestrian.

aire, ire, are also personal terminations denoting an agent: cealg, deceit; cealgaire, a deceiver.

aṁail, a termination having the very same force as the English *like* or *ly*: fearaṁail, manly; flaiṫeaṁail, princely, generous.

as, eas, or sometimes s alone, an abstract termination like aċt: maiṫ, good: maiṫeas, goodness; ceann, a head; ceannas, headship, authority.

ḃar and ḃre have a collective force: as, duille, a leaf (of a tree); duilleaḃar, foliage.

ḋa, da, or ta, is an adjectival termination which has usually the force of the English *-like*: mórḋa,

majestic; órḋa, golden; gallda, exotic, foreign (from gall, a stranger, a foreigner).

e is an abstract termination like aċt or as: whenever it is added to an adjective the resulting abstract noun, owing to the rule "caol le caol," has the very same form as the *genitive singular feminine of the adjective*: as, fial, generous; féile, generosity; árd, high; áirde, height; geal, bright; gile, brightness; áilne, beauty.

laċ, naċ, raċ, taċ, traċ, have all the same meaning as aċ, viz., full of, abounding in: muc, a pig; muclaċ, a piggery; coill, a wood; coillteaċ, a place full of woods; fuilteaċ, bloody; toilteaċ (toilteannaċ), willing.

ṁar means *full of, abounding in*: ceol, music; ceolṁar, musical; greann, fun; greannṁar, full of fun, amusing; ciallṁar, sensible, intelligent.

óir, dóir, or tóir, denotes a *personal agent*: speal, a scythe; spealadóir, a mower, reaper; doirseóir, a door-keeper.

Diminutives.

457. In Irish there are three diminutive terminations, viz., ín, án, and óg. However, ín is practically the only diminutive termination in Modern Irish as án and óg have almost lost their diminutive force. A double diminutive is sometimes met with, as árdáinín, *a very little height*.

ÍN.

458. **The termination ÍN, meaning "small" or "little," may be added to almost every Irish noun.** Whenever the final consonant is broad it must be made slender (as the ín always remains unaltered), **the vowels undergoing the same changes as in the formation of the genitive singular, but Ċ is not changed into Ġ** (see pars. 60 and 78).

asal, an ass	asailín,	a little ass	
fear, a man	firín,	a „	man
gort, a field	goirtín,	a „	field
cailleaċ, an old woman	caillicín,	a „	old woman
sráid, a street	sráidín,	a „	street, a lane

If the noun ends in E, **drop the** E **and add** ÍN; **but if the noun ends in** A, **drop the** A **and attenuate the preceding consonant; then add** ÍN.

páisde	páisdín	Nóra
Nóirín	mála	máilín

459. ÁN.

srután, a brook,	from	srut, a stream.
árdán, a hillock,	„	árd, high.
dealgán, a knitting-needle,	„	dealg, a thorn.
biorán, a pin,	„	bior, a spit.
leabrán, a booklet,	„	leabar, a book.
geugán, a twig,	„	geug, a branch.
loċán, a little lake,	„	loċ, a lake.
sgiaṫán, a wing,	„	sgiaṫ, a shield.

The above are examples of real diminutives, but such examples are not very numerous.

460. ÓG.

piastóg (péisteog),	a worm,	from	piast, a reptile.
lasóg,	a match,	„	las, a light.
gaḃlóg,	a little fork,	„	gaḃal, a fork.

These are examples of real diminutives in óg, but such real diminutives are not numerous, as most nouns in óg have practically the same meaning as the nouns from which they were derived (the latter being now generally obsolete): cuileog, a fly, from cuil, a fly; driseóg, a briar, from dris, a briar; fuinnseóg, an ash, from fuinnse, an ash.

In Craig's Grammar we find luchóg, a rat (luch, a mouse). This example is a striking instance of the fact that the termination óg is losing (if it has not already lost) its diminutive force.

All derived nouns in óg are feminine.

Derived Nouns.

461. Words are of three classes—Simple, Derivative, and Compound. All simple words are, as a general rule, monosyllables; they are the roots from which derivative and compound words spring. Derivative words are made up of

two or more parts. These parts undergo slight changes when they are united to form words, and thus the component parts are somewhat disguised. The difficulty which presents itself to a student in the spelling of Irish is more apparent than real. The principle of vowel-assimilation is the key to Irish spelling. Let a student once thoroughly grasp the rules for "caol le caol, &c," "aspiration," "eclipsis," "attenuation," and "syncope," and immediately all difficulty vanishes.

Derivatives are formed of simple words and particles. The most important of the latter have been already given under the headings "Prefixes" and "Affixes." We will here give some examples of derivative nouns, a careful study of which will enable the student to split up the longest words into their component parts, and thus arrive at their meanings.

462. trom means heavy; tromas, *i.e.*, trom+as (the abstract termination) means heaviness or weight; éadtrom, light, from trom, and the negative particle éa, which eclipses c and t, hence the d; éadtromas, lightness, from éa, not; trom, heavy; as, ness; coṁtrom, impartial, fair, or just; from coṁ, equal, and trom, heavy; coṁtromas, impartiality, fairness, &c.; éagcoṁtrom, partial, unjust; from

éa+coṁ+trom; éagcoṁtromas, partiality, injustice; from éa+coṁ+trom+as. Spealadóir, a reaper; from speal, a scythe, and dóir, an affix denoting an agent; the a is put in between the l and d to assist pronunciation: cáirde, friends; cáirdeas, friendliness, friendship; eugcáirdeas, unfriendliness, hostility: fearaṁlaċt, manliness; from fear + aṁail + aċt: neiṁ-ġeanaṁlaċt, unamiability; from neiṁ, not + gean, affection + aṁail + aċt: ríoġaċt, a kingdom, from ríoġ + aċt: comórtas, comparison, emulation, competition; from co (coṁ), equal, and mórtas, greatness, *i.e.*, comparing the greatness of one thing with that of another.

463. Compound nouns are formed by the union of two or more simple nouns, or of a noun and an adjective.

(A.) **A compound noun formed of two or more nouns, each in the nominative case, has its declension determined by the last noun. Its gender also is that of the last noun,** unless the first noun-part be such as requires a different gender. The first word qualifies the second, and the initial consonant of the second is *usually* aspirated.

(B.) **If the compound is formed of a noun in the nominative form followed by a genitive noun, the first is the principal noun, and determines the declension and gender;** the second qualifies the first, and generally remains unaltered, and the aspiration of the initial consonant in this case depends on the gender of the first noun. See par. 21(f).

We will give here a few examples of the two chief kinds of compound nouns. It is usual to employ a hyphen between the nouns in Class A, but not in Class B.

464. **Class A.**

breug-rí, a pseudo king	breug, a lie, and rí, a king
bun-sruṫ, a fountain	bun, a source, origin, and sruṫ, a stream
caṫ-ḃarr, a helmet	caṫ, a battle, and bárr, top, head
clap-ṡolas, twilight	
cloig-ṫeaċ, a belfry	clog, a clock, bell, and teaċ, a house
craoḃ-ḟleasg, a garland	craoḃ, a branch, and fleasg, a wreath
cúl-ċaint, back-biting	cúl, the back of the head, and caint, talk
caoir-ḟeoil, mutton laoiġ-ḟeoil, veal muic-ḟeoil, pork, bacon mairt-ḟeoil, beef	feoil, flesh; caora, a sheep laoġ, a calf; muc, a pig mart, a beef
láṁ-ḋia, a household god	láṁ, a hand; Dia, God;
láṁ-eudaċ, a	eudaċ, a cloth; órd, a sledge

handkerchief, a napkin

lámṁ-órd, a hand-sledge

leiṫ-sgeul,[2] an excuse leaṫ, a half, and sgeul, a story

ór-ṡlat, a sceptre; ór, gold; and slat, a rod

tír-ġráḋ, patriotism; tír, country; and gráḋ, love

465. **Class B.**

brat taise, a winding-sheet (a garment of death).

fear ceoil, a musician (a man of music).

fear feasa, a seer (a man of knowledge; fios, gen. feasa).

fear tiġe, a householder (a man of a house).

mac tíre, a wolf (son of (the) country).

cú ṁara, an otter (a hound of the sea; muir, gen. mara).

laoġ mara, a seal (a calf of the sea).

fear ionaid, a lieutenant, vicegerent (a man of place).

teaċ ósta, an inn, hotel (a house of entertainment).

maiġistir scoile, a schoolmaster (a master of a school).

uḃ ċirce, a hen-egg (an egg of a hen.)

bean síḋe or bean t-síḋe, a fairy (a woman of the síoḋ, a fairy hill).

466. **A Noun and an Adjective.**

árd-rí, a high king.

árd-tiġearna, a sovereign lord.

árd-réim, supreme power, chief power.

claon-ḃreiṫ, partiality; claon, inclined: and breiṫ, a judgment.

crom-leac, a druidical altar; crom, bent; and leac, a stone, flag.

daor-ḃreiṫ, condemnation; daor, condemned.

daor-ógláċ, a bond-slave; ógláċ, a servant.

dearḃráṫair (dearḃ-ḃráṫair), a brother by blood

deirḃṡiúr, a sister by blood.

} dearḃ, real or true.

} bráṫair and siúr, brother and sister (in religion).

fíor-uisge, spring water: fíor, true, pure; uisge, water.

gairḃ-ṡíon, a tempest: garḃ, rough; and síon, weather.

girr-ḟiaḋ, a hare: gearr, short; and fiaḋ, a deer.

nuaḋ-ḋuine, an upstart: nuaḋ, new, fresh; and duine, a person.

sean-aṫair, a grandfather,

sean-sean-aṫair (sé-sean-aṫair), a great grandfather.

sean-ṁáṫair, a grandmother.

sean-aois, old age.

} sean, old; aṫair, a father. máṫair, a mother; aois, age. reaċt, law; dliġe is a more common word for law.

sean-reaċt, the old law.

treun-ḟear, a brave man.

treun-laoċ, a hero.

saor-ṡealḃ, a freehold: sealḃ, possession.

trom-luiġe, a nightmare.

uasal-aṫair, a patriarch.

saoiḃ-ċiall, folly, silliness: saoḃ, silly; and ciall, sense

fóir-ḃriaṫar, an adverb: fóir, before; and briaṫar, a word.

fóir-imeall, a frontier, extremity; imeall, a border, a hem.

fóir-ḃreiṫ, a prejudice (a fore-judgment).

fóir-neart, violence.

fóir-éigean, oppression, compulsion.

Formation of Adjectives.

467. (*a*) **Adjectives may be formed from many nouns by the addition of** AĊ **or** EAĊ, which signifies *full of*, *abounding in*. All these adjectives belong to the first declension, and are declined like díreaċ.

NOUN.	ADJECTIVE.
fearg, anger	feargaċ, angry
fuil, blood	fuilteaċ, bloody
feur, grass	feuraċ, grassy
buaiḋ, victory	buaḋaċ, victorious
breug, a lie	breugaċ, false, lying
diċeall, one's best endeavour	díċeallaċ, energetic
seasaṁ, standing	seasṁaċ, steadfast
gnó, work	gnóṫaċ, busy
clú, fame	clúiteaċ, famous
saoṫar, toil	saoṫraċ, industrious
lúb, a loop	lúbaċ, deceitful
saoġal, life	saoġlaċ, long-lived
sáiṫ, sufficiency	sáṫaċ, satiated
Alba, Scotland	Albanaċ, Scotch
Sacsain, England	Sacsanaċ, English
craoḃ, branch	craoḃaċ, branchy
carraig, a rock	cairgeaċ, rocky

brón, sorrow
sal, dirt
fios, knowledge
átas, joy
doilġíos, sorrow
cleas, a trick
tuirse, weariness
uisge, water
neul, a cloud
leanḃ, a child
gaoṫ, wind
imniḋe, anxiety
cúṁaċt, power
reult, a star
aire, care
foiġid, patience
eagla, fear
toil, a will

brónaċ, sorrowful
salaċ, dirty
fiosaċ, intelligent
átasaċ, joyous
doilġíosaċ, sorrowful
cleasaċ, tricky
tuirseaċ, weary
uisgeaċ, watery
neulaċ, cloudy
leanḃaċ, childish
gaoṫaċ, windy
imniḋeaċ, anxious
cúṁaċtaċ, powerful
reultaċ, starry
aireaċ, attentive
foiġideaċ, patient
eaglaċ, timid
toilteanaċ, willing

cúram, heed	cúramaċ, careful
iomarca, too much	iomarcaċ, excessive, copious

(*b*). **Many adjectives are formed by adding** ṀAR **to nouns.**

All these adjectives belong to the first declension and are declined like mór.

NOUN.	ADJECTIVE.
ád, luck	ádṁar, lucky.
ceol, music	ceolṁar, musical
ciall, sense	ciallṁar, sensible
feur, grass	feurṁar, grassy
feoil, flesh	feolṁar, fleshy
fonn, fancy	fonnṁar, desirous
glóir, glory	glórṁar, glorious
greann, fun	greannṁar, funny
luaċ, price, value	luaċṁar, valuable
líon, number	líonṁar, numerous
neart, strength	neartṁar, powerful
sgát, a shadow	sgátṁar, shy, startled
lút, activity	lútṁar, active, nimble

(*c*). **Very many adjectives are formed from nouns by the addition of** AṀAIL **or** EAṀAIL (both pronounced oo-il or u-wil). All these adjectives belong to the third declension.

NOUN.	ADJECTIVE.
fear, a man	fearaṁail, manly
bean, a woman	beanaṁail, womanly
flaiṫ, a prince	flaiṫeaṁail, generous
ainm, a name	ainmeaṁail, renowned
meas, esteem	measaṁail, estimable
lá (pl. laeṫe), a day	laeṫeaṁail, daily
gráin, hatred	gráineaṁail, hateful
cara (pl. cáirde), a friend	cáirdeaṁail, friendly
naṁa (pl. náiṁde), an enemy	náiṁdeaṁail, hostile
croiḋe, a heart	croiḋeaṁail, hearty, gay
rí (gen. ríoġ), a king	ríoġaṁail, kingly, royal
caoi (pl. caoiṫe), a way	caoiṫeaṁail, opportune
riar, order	riaraṁail, subject, docile, obedient
gean, affection	geanaṁail, affectionate
moḋ, manner	moḋaṁail, mannerly

tír (pl. tíorṫa), country		tíorṫaṁail,	country-like, homely, social
meisneaċ, misneaċ,	} courage	misneaṁail,	courageous
teine (pl. teinte), fire		teinteaṁail,	fiery, igneous
sliaḃ, (pl. sléiḃte), a mountain		sléiḃteaṁail,	mountainous
greann, fun		greannaṁail,	funny, gay
eun, a bird		eunaṁail,	bird-like, airy
coṁursa, a neighbour		coṁursaṁail,	neighbourly
barántas, authority		barántaṁail,	authentic

(*d*). **There is a fourth class of adjectives formed by the termination** DA (ḊA); but it is not as large as the three preceding classes. The following are some of the principal ones:—

diaḋa, godly, divine	daona (daonda) human
fearḋa, masculine	gránda, ugly
banda, feminine	cróḋa, brave
órḋa, golden, gilt	beoḋa, lively
laoċḋa, heroic	gallda, exotic or foreign
seanda, ancient	naoṁta (naoṁḋa), holy, saintly

Compound adjectives are extremely common in Irish, being usually formed by the union of two or more simple adjectives (sometimes of a noun and an adjective); but these compound adjectives present no difficulty once the simple adjectives have been mastered.

FORMATION OF VERBS.

468. **Verbs can be readily formed from nouns and adjectives by the addition of** IĠ **or** UIĠ. The addition of this termination is sometimes accompanied by syncope, which often necessitates slight vowel changes in accordance with the rule "caol le caol."

469. (*a*). **Verbs derived from Nouns.**

NOUN.	VERB (Stem).
ainm, a name	ainmniġ, name
beaṫa, life	beaṫuiġ, nourish
cuiṁne, memory	cuiṁniġ, remember
cuid, a part	cuidiġ le, assist (take part with)
cúl, the back of the head	cúluiġ, retire
saoṫar, exertion	saoṫruiġ, exert
cuairt, a visit.	cuartuiġ, visit, search
leas, improvement	leasuiġ, improve
neart, strength	neartuiġ, strengthen
aċt, a decree	aċtuiġ, decree, enact
bás, death	básuiġ, put to death
caṫ, a battle	caṫuiġ, contend, fight
céim, a step	céimniġ, step, advance
críoċ, an end	críoċnuiġ, finish
criṫ, a trembling	criṫniġ, tremble
gorta, hunger, injury	gortuiġ, injure

iomad, multitude	iomaduiġ, multiply
órd, an order	órduiġ, order, command
solus, a light	soillsiġ, enlighten
tus (tos), a beginning	tosuiġ, begin
treoir, a guide	treoruiġ, guide, lead
pian, pain	pianuiġ, cause pain
obair, work	oibriġ, work

(*b*). **Verbs derived from Adjectives.**

ADJECTIVE.	VERB (Stem).
árd, high	árduiġ, raise
bán, white	bánuiġ, whiten
duḃ, black	duḃuiġ, blacken
boḋar, deaf	boḋruiġ deafen, bother
buan, lasting	buanuiġ preserve
follus, apparent	foillsiġ, reveal, show
fuar, cold	fuaruiġ, cool, chill
lag, weak	laguiġ, weaken
slán, well	slánuiġ, make well, cure
tirim, dry	tiormuiġ, or trimiġ, dry
boċt, poor	boċtuiġ, impoverish
ceart, right	ceartuiġ, correct
mín, fine	mínigh, make fine, *explain*
ísiol, low	ísliġ, lower
uṁal, humble	uṁluiġ, humble
saiḋḃir, rich	saiḋḃriġ, enrich

The compound verbs are very few, and are therefore of little consequence to the beginner.

1. ↑ dí, dío eclipse words beginning with ḃ or ḟ, díombuiḋeaċas, ingratitude.
2. ↑ gaḃ mo leiṫ-sgeul I beg your pardon. (Lit. Accept my excuse).

Notes

PART III.—SYNTAX.

CHAPTER I.

The Article.

470. **In Irish the article always precedes its noun, and agrees with it in gender, number and case** as, an fear, the man; na fir, the men; an ḟir, of the man; na mná, of the woman.

471. **When one noun governs another in the genitive case the article cannot be used with the first noun:** as, mac an ḟir, *the* son of the man; fear an tiġe, *the* man of the house, &c.

Notice the difference between *the son of the man*, mac an ḟir, and *a son of the man*, mac do'n ḟear.

Exceptions. (1) When a demonstrative adjective is used with the first noun (the governing one), the article must also be used; as, tá an teaċ sain mo ċarad le díol, that house of my friend's is for sale.

(2) If the two nouns form a compound word, the article is used before the first, if used in English: a newspaper, páipeur nuaiḋeaċta; but, the newspaper, an páipeur nuaiḋeaċta.

(3) When the noun in the genitive case is an indefinite[1] one, *which denotes a part of something, the material of which a thing is made, or the contents of the first noun*, the article is used with the first noun when it is used in English: —

an greim aráin, the piece of bread.
an mála mine, the bag of meal.
an crúisgín uisge, the little jug of water.

We say blas aráin, for, the taste of bread; boladḋ éisg, the smell of fish; mac ríoġ, the son of a king; because if the noun in the genitive expresses quality, connection, or origin, the governing noun does not take the article.

472. If a nominative be followed by several genitives the article can be used only with the last (if "the" be used in English), as, truime ċinn an ċapaill, the weight of the horse's head.

The article is often omitted before a noun which is antecedent to a relative clause; as, Is é duine do ḃí ann. He is the person who was there.

473. **In the following cases the definite article is frequently used in Irish though not used in English.**

(1) **Before surnames,** when not preceded by a Christian name, as, Raiḃ an Breaṫnaċ ann? Was Walsh there?

(2) **Before the names of some countries**, as, an Spáinn, Spain; an Ḟrainc, France; rí na h-Éireann, the king of Ireland; also before Rome, ’san Róiṁ, in Rome; ó’n Róiṁ, from Rome. **The article is not used before the names of Ireland, England or Scotland in the nominative and dative cases.**

(3) **Before abstract nouns:** an t-ocras, hunger.

Is maiṫ an t-annlann an t-ocras. Hunger is a good sauce.

We frequently use an bás for “death.”

The article is not used in such sentences, as:—

Tá ocras orm. I am hungry.

(4) **Before nouns qualified by the demonstrative adjectives:** an fear sain, that man; an ḃean so, this woman.

(5) **Before adjectives used as nouns:**

an ṁaiṫ agus an t-olc, goodness and badness.

Is fearr liom an glas ná an dearg. I prefer green to red.

(6) After "Cé" meaning "which" or "what."

Cé an fear? Which man?
Cé an leaḃar? What book ?

(7) To translate **"apiece," "per"** or **"a"** before words expressing weight and measure;

Raol an ceann. Sixpence apiece.

In speaking of *a period of time* sa (ins an) is used, as, uair sa mbliaḋain, once a year.

(8). **Before titles:**

An t-aṫair Eoġan Ua Graṁna Father Eugene O'Growney.

An t-aṫair Peadar Ua Laoġaire. Father Peter O'Leary.

An doċtúir Duḃglas De h-Íde. Dr. Douglas Hyde.

(9) **To express any attribute:**

A ḃean na dtrí mbó. woman of three cows.

(10) The article is used before the word denoting the use to which a thing is put, or the place where a thing is found or produced.

Mála na mine. The meal bag, *i.e.*, the bag for holding meal.

Crúisgín an uisge. The water-jug.

Compare these with the following:—

An mála mine. The bag of meal.

An crúisgín uisge. The jug of water.

(11) Before the word "uile" meaning "every."

An uile ḟear. Every man.
An uile ṫír. Every country.

(12) Whenever an indefinite noun, accompanied by an adjective is predicated of a pronoun by means of the verb is, the definite article must be used with the noun whenever the adjective is placed immediately after the verb.

Is breáġ an lá é. It is a fine day.
Is maiṫ an fear ṫú. You are a good man.

(13) **Before the names of seasons, months, days of the week** (when not preceded by the word dé).

An é an Saṫarn atá againn? Is to-day Saturday?

An indiu an Luan?
An é seo an Luan? } Is this Monday?

Indiu an Aoine. To-day is Friday.

1. ↑ See par. 585

Notes

CHAPTER II

The Noun.

474. In Irish one noun governs another in the genitive case, and the governed noun comes after the governing one.

Ceann an ċapaill. The horse's head.

The noun, capaill, in the genitive case is aspirated by the article because it is masculine gender. It would not be aspirated if it were feminine. (See par. 40.)

475. When the governed noun in the genitive is a proper name it is generally aspirated, whether it be masculine or feminine, although the article is not used.

Peann Ṁáire. Mary's pen.
Leaḃar Ṡeaġáin. John's book.

The last rule is by no means generally true of *place names*.

476. When the noun in genitive case has the force of an adjective, it is not preceded by the article, but its initial consonant is subject to precisely the same rules, with regard to aspiration and eclipsis, as if it were a simple adjective, *i.e.*, it is aspirated if the governing noun be nominative or accusative singular feminine, or genitive singular

masculine. It is eclipsed if the governing noun be in the genitive plural.

uḃ ċirce, a hen-egg (an egg of a hen)
uiḃe circe, of a hen-egg.
fear ceoil, a musician.
fir ċeoil, of a musician.
na ḃfear gceoil, of the musicians.

477. **Apposition** has almost entirely disappeared in modern Irish, **the second noun being now usually in the nominative case**, no matter what the case of the first may be.

478. **A noun used adjectively in English is translated into Irish by the genitive case.**

A gold ring, fáinne óir (lit. a ring of gold).
A hen-egg, uḃ ċirce.
Oatmeal, min ċoirce.

479. **Collective nouns** (except in their own plurals) always take the article and qualifying adjectives in the singular; they *sometimes* take a plural pronoun, and may take a plural verb.

Ṫángadar an ḃuiḋean curaḋ sin do láṫair Ḟinn agus do ḃeannuiġ siad dó. That company of warriors came into the presence of Finn, and saluted him (lit. to him).

480. **Nouns denoting fulness or a part of anything** are usually followed by the preposition de and the dative case, but the genitive is also used.

ceann (or gaḋar) d'ár ngaḋraiḃ, one of our hounds.

bárr mo ḃróige, the top of my shoe.

lán mo ḋuirn, the full of my fist.

In phrases such as "some of us," "one of them," &c., "of us," "of them," &c., are usually translated by againn, aca, &c.; but dínn, díoḃ, &c., may also be used.

481. **The personal numerals** from días to dáreug inclusive (see par. 177) **generally take their nouns in the genitive plural**: beirt ṁac, two sons; naonḃar fear, nine men (lit. two of sons, nine of men).

A ṫriúr mac agus a dtriúr ban.

His three sons and their three wives.

482. When used partitively they take de with the **dative**.

Ḃáiḋ sé naonḃar ḋíoḃ fá ’n loċ.
He drowned nine of them under the lake.
Naoi naonḃar de ṁaoraiḃ na h-Éireann.
Nine times nine of the stewards of Erin.

Personal Nouns.

483. An Irish name consists of two parts, the ainm-baisdiḋ (or simply ainm), which corresponds to the English Christian name, and the sloinneaḋ, the surname or family name.

Surnames were first used in Ireland about the eleventh century; until that time every Irish personal name was significant, and sometimes rendered more so by the application of some epithet. “In the early ages individuals received their names from epithets implying some personal peculiarity, such as colour of hair, complexion, size, figure, certain accidents of deformity, mental qualities, such as bravery, fierceness, &c.” Joyce’s “Irish Names of Places.”

484. **When the Christian name is used in addressing a person, it is always in the vocative case, and preceded by the particle** A, which causes aspiration, *e.g.*:

Fan liom, a Ṡeaġáin. Wait for me, John.

Dia ḋuit, a Ṡeumais. Good morning, James.

485. When the Christian name is in the genitive case, it is aspirated, *e.g.*:

Leaḃar Ṁáire. Mary's book.
Sgian Ṡeoirse. George's knife.

486. **Surnames when not preceded by a Christian name usually take the termination** AĊ, which has the force of a patronymic (or father-name), and are declined like marcaċ (par. 57). **They are usually preceded by the article except in the vocative case:** an Paoraċ, Power; capall an Ḃrianaiġ, O'Brien's horse

Two forms are admissible in the vocative case; facility of pronunciation is the best guide, *e.g.* Gaḃ i leiṫ, a Ḃrianaiġ. Come here, O'Brien. A Ṁic Uí Laoġaire, O'Leary. A Ṁic Uí Ṡuiḃne, MacSweeney.

487. Surnames occurring in Ireland to-day are of three classes: (1) Surnames of Gaelic origin. **These in almost every instance have the prefix** Ó (Ua) **or** Mac **for a male, and** Ní **or** Nic **for a female.** (2) Surnames of old

foreign origin. The majority of these have no prefix. (3) Surnames of late foreign origin. Only a few of these have acquired a distinct form, pronounced in an Irish way.

488. **When the surname is preceded by any ot the words** Ó, Mac, Ní, Nic, **the surname is in the genitive case, and is aspirated after** Ní **or** Nic, **but not after** Ó **or** Mac: *e.g.*, Seaġán Mac Doṁnaill, John McDonnell; Máire Ní Ċonaill, Mary O'Connell; Diarmuid Ó Conaill, Dermot O'Connell; Nóra Nic Ḋoṁnaill, Nora McDonnell.

489. **When the whole name is in the genitive case, the words after** Uí **(gen. of** Ó **or** Ua**) and** Ṁic **(gen. of** Mac**) are aspirated;** Ní **and** Nic **do not change in genitive.** Leaḃar Ṡeumais Uí Ḃriain, James O'Brien's book; bó Ḃriain Ṁic Ḋoṁnaill, Brian McDonnell's cow.

490. Mac and Ó aspirate when they really mean "son" and "grandson" respectively.

Mac Ḋoṁnaill, Donal's son.
Mac Doṁnaill, McDonnell.

Ó Ḃriain, Brian's grandson.
Ó Briain, O'Brien.

491. Some surnames take the article after Mac and Nic —*e.g.*:

Seumas Mac an Ḃáird, James Ward.
Nóra Nic an Ultaiġ, Nora McNulty.

CHAPTER III.

The Adjective.

492. An adjective may be used either **predicatively** or **attributively**. An adjective is used *predicatively* when it is predicated of a noun by a verb, and in this case it is usually separated from the noun by the verb. “The way was *long*, the wind was *cold*.” “The day is *fine*.” “He made the mantles *green*.” “Long,” “cold,” “fine,” and “green” are used *predicatively*. An adjective is used *attributively* whenever it is not separated from the noun by the verb, and is not predicated of a noun by a verb: as, “The *infirm old* minstrel went wearily along.” “He made the *green* mantles.” The adjectives “*infirm*,” “*old*,” and “*green*” are here used *attributively*.

493. **In Irish almost every common adjective can be used both predicatively and attributively.** There are, however, one or two **exceptions**: droċ, bad, and deaġ, good, can *never* be used predicatively. If “bad” or “good” be used predicatively in the English sentence, we must use olc, bad, or maiṫ, good, in Irish. Never say or write is deaġ é for “he is good,” but is maiṫ é, &c.

The adjective iomḋa is always used predicatively with is. In Munster ’mó is used instead of iomḋa.

Is iomḋa marcaċ do ġaḃ an tsliġe seo.
('Tis) many a rider (that) has gone this way.

ADJECTIVE USED ATTRIBUTIVELY.

(*a*) **The Position of the Adjective.**

494. **As a general rule the adjective follows its noun** in Irish: as, leaḃar mór, a big book; fear maiṫ, a good man.

Exceptions. (1) A numeral adjective, whether ordinal or cardinal, when it consists of one word, always precedes its noun: as trí ba, three cows; ḋá ċirc, two hens. The *interrogative*, *possessive*, and most of the *indefinite adjectives* also precede their noun.

(2) Monosyllabic adjectives are frequently placed before the noun, but then the noun and adjective form a compound noun, and consequently the initial of the noun is aspirated, when possible. This is always the case with adjectives: deaġ, good; droċ, bad; sean, old; and frequently with nuaḋ, new; and fíor, true. In this position the form of the adjectives never changes for number or case, but it is subject to the very same initial changes as if it were a noun.

sean-ḟear, an old man; sean-ḟir, old men.
treun-ḟear, a brave man; árd-rí, a high king.

an tsean-ḃean, the old woman;
láṁ an tsean-ḟir, the hand of the old man.

(3) When a name consists of two words the adjective frequently comes between them: as, "Sliaḃ geal gCua," "the bright Slieve Gua."

(*b*) **Agreement of the Adjective.**

When an adjective is used attributively and follows its noun, it agrees with the noun in gender, number, and case: as, bean ṁór, a big woman; mac an ḟir ṁóir, the son of the big man; na fir ṁóra, the big men.

For the aspiration and eclipsis of the adjective see par. 149.

495. Since the adjective in English has no inflexion for gender, it is quite a common thing to have one adjective qualifying two or more nouns of different genders. Sometimes in Irish we meet with one adjective qualifying two nouns of different genders or numbers; in such cases the adjective follows the latter noun, and agrees with it alone. However, the more usual method is to use the adjective after each noun: as,

Fear maiṫ agus bean ṁaiṫ.
A good man and woman.

ADJECTIVE USED PREDICATIVELY.

(*a*) **Position of the Adjective.**

496. **An adjective used predicatively always follows its noun, except when it is predicated by means of the verb** IS, in any of its forms, expressed or understood.

The men are good, Tá na fir maiṫ.
The day is fine, Tá an lá breáġ.

If the verb is be used in these sentences, notice the position of the adjective and the use of the pronoun.

The men are good, Is maiṫ na fir iad.
The day is fine, Is breáġ an lá é.

(*b*) **Agreement of the Adjective.**

An adjective used predicatively never agrees with its noun in either gender, number, or case: in other words, the *simple form of the adjective is always used*.

Moreover, it is never aspirated nor eclipsed by the noun.

497. When the adjective comes immediately after the Past Tense or Conditional of is (*i.e.*, ba or buḋ), its initial is

generally aspirated, when possible; but in this case it is not the noun which causes aspiration.

Ba ḃreáġ an lá é. It was a fine day.

498. Notice the difference in meaning between the following: —

Rinne sé na sgeana geura	He made the sharp knives.
Rinne sé geur na sgeana Rinne sé na sgeana geur	He made the knives sharp.
Tá an ḃó ṁór duḃ.	The big cow is black.
Tá an ḃó ḋuḃ mór.	The black cow is big.
Tá an oiḋċe dorċa fliuċ.	The night is dark and wet.
Tá an oiḋċe ḟliuċ dorċa.	The wet night is dark.

499. **Adjectives denoting fulness or a part of anything** are usually followed by de with the dative case:

full of milk, lán de ḃainne.

two barrels full of water, dá bharaile lán d' uisge.

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

Position of the Words.

500. **A numeral adjective, whether ordinal or cardinal, when it consists of one word, goes before the noun.**

ceithre capaill, four horses; sé caoirigh, six sheep.

an ċeud bhuachaill, the first boy.

The words for 40, 60, 80, 200, 800, &c, also precede their nouns.

501. **A numeral adjective, except those just mentioned, consisting of two or more words, takes its noun immediately after the first part** of the numeral: as,

ceithre capaill deug, fourteen horses.
dá uan deug, twelve lambs.
dá bhuin deug is trí fichid, seventy-two cows.

502. **When we wish to express large numbers in Irish,** we may either place the unit digit first, then the tens, next the hundreds, and so on; or we may express them in the English

order. Convenience for utterance and clearness of sense are the best guides in any particular case.

The word AGUS **is generally used with the larger numbers** CÉAD, MÍLE, **etc., and** IS **with the smaller ones.**

129 miles, céad (míle) agus naoi míle fiċead.

79 horses, naoi gcapaill déag is trí fiċid.

5,635 men, cúig ṁíle agus sé ċéad fear agus cúig fir deág ar ḟiċid.

256 sheep, sé caoiriġ déag is dá ḟiċid agus (ar) trí ċéad.

1,666 years, sé bliaḋna is trí fiċid agus (ar) sé ċéad agus (ar) míle.

519 A.D., aois do'n tiġearna cúig ċéad agus naoi déag.

52,000 of the Roman army, ḋá ṁíle déag is dá ḟiċid míle de ṡluaġ Róṁánaċ.

More than 400 years, tuille(aḋ) (breis) agus ceiṫre ċéad bliaḋain.

About 80, tuairim le (*or* timċeall le) ceiṫre fiċid.

„ is „ „ is „ „

The word sliġe is often added to make it clear that *miles* not thousands is meant. Sé míle sliġe, *or* sé míle [de] ṡliġe, *six miles*.

503. The initials of the numerals undergo the very same changes with regard to aspiration and eclipsis as a noun would in the same position.

504. The article prefixes t to aonṁaḋ, first, and to oċtṁaḋ, eighth, whether the following noun be masculine or feminine: as,

an t-oċtṁaḋ ḃean, the eighth woman.

Initial Changes produced by the Numerals.

505. Aon, **one;** dá, **two;** ceud, **first; and** treas, **third, aspirate the initial of the following word:** as,

aon ḃó aṁáin, one cow; an ċeud ḟear, the first man.

506. Aon, prefixes t to the letter s; but has no effect on d or t: aon asal aṁáin, one ass; aon ċos aṁáin, one foot; aon tsagart aṁáin, one priest; aon tslat aṁáin, one rod; aon tseaḃac aṁáin, one hawk; dá ṡeaḃac, two hawks; aon taoḃ aṁáin, one side.

507. Seaċt, **seven;** oċt, **eight;** naoi, **nine; and** deiċ, **ten;** and their compounds **eclipse the initial of the following noun and prefix** n **to vowels;** seaċt mba, seven cows; deiċ n-uḃla, ten apples.

508. Trí, ceiṫre, cúig and sé have usually no effect on consonants (except ceud, 100, and míle, 1000); but trí, ceiṫre, sé, and dara prefix h to vowels: as, trí ba, three cows; trí h-asail, three asses; sé h-uḃla, six apples; ’san dara h-áit, in the second place; trí ċeud, 300; ceiṫre ṁíle, 4000.

Trí, ceiṫre, cúig **and** sé (**as well as** seaċt, oċt, &c.), **cause eclipsis in the genitive plural:** a ḃean na dtrí mbó. *O woman of three cows!* Luaċ ceiṫre bpúnt *four pound’s worth.*

The Number of the Noun after the Numerals.

509. **The noun after aon is always in the singular, even in such numbers as 11, 21 , 31, 41, &c. The other numerals (except dá) may take the singular number when unity of idea is expressed:** *e.g.*, aon uḃall déag, *eleven apples*; ḋearmad sé ar na trí ḃuille ’ḃualaḋ. He forgot to strike the three blows.

510. When a noun has two forms in the plural, a short form and a long one, the short form is preferred after the numerals: as

naoi n-uaire, nine times; not naoi n-uaireannta.

511. **In Modern Irish the numerals** fiċe, **20;** dá ḟiċid, **40, &c.,** ceud, **100;** míle, **1,000, are regarded as simple numeral adjectives which take the noun after them in the singular number.**

512. This peculiar construction has arisen from the fact that these numerals are really *nouns*, and formerly governed the nouns after them in the *genitive plural*. As the genitive plural of most Irish nouns has exactly the same form as the nominative singular, the singular form has come to be almost universally used in Modern Irish after these numerals. Formerly they would use ceud ban and fiċe caoraċ, but now we use ceud bean and fiċe caora.

513. The word ceann and its plural cinn are often used with numerals *when the noun is not expressed in English*: as, Ca ṁeud (an'mó) leaḃar agat? Tá ḋá ċeann deug agam. How many books have you? I have twelve.

Tá ceann (or duine) aca ins an tiġ.
There is one of them in the house.

The Dual Number.

514. Ḋá, **"two," always takes the noun after it in the dual number** (neither singular nor plural), **which in every Irish noun has the same form as the dative singular.** This does not at all imply that the noun after dá is in the dative case. It is in the *dative singular form*, but it may be in any of the five cases, according to its use in the sentence. **All the cases of the dual number are alike, but the form of the genitive plural is often used for the genitive dual:** ḋá ḃuin, two cows; ḋá ġaḃainn, two smiths; lán a ḋá láiṁ or lán a ḋá láṁ, the full of his two hands.

515. **The article** which qualifies a noun in the dual number **will always be in the singular form.**

516. **The adjective** which qualifies a noun in the dual number **will be in the plural form,** but really in the dual

number; the **pronouns** belonging to the noun **will be in the plural form;** and the **verb may,** but need not be; because in these parts of speech the dual number and the plural number have the same forms.

517. The **initial of an adjective**[1] qualifying and agreeing with a noun in the dual number **will be aspirated**, no matter what the gender or case of the noun may be: as,

dá ṫiġ deug,	twelve houses.
an dá láiṁ ḃána,	the two white hands.
lán a dá láiṁ ḃeag,	the full of her two little hands.

518. **The** d **of** dá **is usually aspirated,** except after words ending in d, n, t, l, s (dentals), or after the possessive adjective a, her.

a dá ċois ḃeaga, her two little feet.

The Possessive Adjective.

519. A possessive adjective can never be used without a noun: as, her father and his, a h-aṫair agus a aṫair.

520. The possessive adjectives always precede their nouns: as, mo ṁáṫair, my mother.

521. The possessives mo, my; do, thy; and a, his, aspirate the initial of their nouns; ár, our; ḃur, your; and a, their, cause eclipsis: as, a ḋán, his poem; do ṁáṫair, thy mother; a dán, her poem ; a ndán, their poem.

522. **If a noun begins with a vowel,** mo, my, and do, thy, become m’ and d’ (t or ṫ); a, his, has no effect; a, her, prefixes h; and a, their, prefixes n; ár, our, and ḃur, your, also prefix n to vowels: as, a aṫair, his father; a h-aṫair, her father; a n-aṫair, their father; m’ḟear, my husband; d’eun, your bird; ár n-arán laeṫeaṁail, our daily bread; ḃur n-aḃrán, your song.

523. The possessive adjectives, when compounded with prepositions (see par. 186), have the same influence over the initials of their nouns as they have in their uncompounded state: as, dom ṁáṫair, to my mother; óm ṫír, from my country.

524. When the portion of a thing which belongs to one or more persons is to be expressed by the possessive adjectives, the name of the thing is preceded by cuid, with the

possessive adjective before it. The name of the thing is in the genitive case—genitive singular if *quantity* be implied, but genitive plural if *number*—as, my bread, mo ċuid aráin (lit. my share of bread); his wine, a ċuid fíona; their horses, a gcuid capall.

This rule is not always followed; for instance, we sometimes find m'ḟíon, my wine; but mo ċuid fíona is more idiomatic.

525. The word cuid is never used in this way before the name of a single object.

mo leaḃar, my book; a gcapall, their horse.
a leaḃar, his book; but a ċuid leaḃar, his books.
a bó, her cow; a cuid bó, her cows.

526. The word cuid is not used in such phrases as mo ċosa, my feet; mo ṡúile, my eyes; a ċnáṁa, his bones, &c.

527. When the emphatic suffix is used, some make it follow ċuid; others make it follow the noun: as, mo ċuid-se aráin or mo ċuid aráin-se.

1. ↑ Except demonstrative, possessive, indefinite, and interrogative adjectives.

Notes

CHAPTER IV.

THE PRONOUN.

Personal Pronoun.

528. **The personal pronouns agree with the nouns for which they stand in gender, number and person:** as, He is a big man. Is mór an fear é. They are big men. Is mór na fir iad.

529. **A personal pronoun which stands for a noun the gender of which is different from its sex, agrees in gender with the sex of the noun**; as, Is maiṫ an cailín í. She is a good girl. Is olc an ċoṁursa é. He is a bad neighbour.

530. In Irish we have no neuter pronoun corresponding to the English "it;" hence, in translating "it," we must determine the gender of the Irish noun (masculine or feminine) and then use sé (he) or sí (she) accordingly:[1] as, It is terrible weather. Is caillte an aimsir í. Is to-day Friday? An í an Aoine atá againn? Dob í

an ḟírinne í. It was the truth. Tá an casúr agam, ní ḟuil sé trom. I have the hammer, it is not heavy.

531. The pronoun tú, thou, is always used to translate the English "you" when only one person is referred to; as, How are you? Cionnas tá tú? What a man you are! Naċ tú an fear!

532. **The personal pronouns, whether nominative or accusative, always come after the yerb;** as, molann sé ṫú, he praises you.

533. **The disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are used immediately after the verb IS in any of its forms expressed or understood;** as, is é an fear láidir é. He is a strong man. An é a fuair é? Was it he who found it? Naċ í d' inġean í? Is she not your daughter?

534. A personal pronoun which stands for a sentence, or part of a sentence, is third person singular, masculine gender. An rud aduḃairt mé, is é adeirim arís. What I said, I repeat.

535. **The accusative personal pronoun usually comes last in the sentence or clause to which it belongs:** as, D'ḟág sé ar an áit sin iad. He left them at that place. Rug sé leis míle eile é. He brought it with him another mile. D'ḟágas im ḋiaiḋ é. I left it after me.

Relative Pronoun.

536. The relative particle follows its antecedent and precedes its verb: as, an fear a ċodlóċas, the man who will sleep.

537. The relative particle, whether expressed or understood, always causes aspiration: as, an fear ḃeas ag obair, the man who will be at work.

538. **The relative when preceded by a preposition causes eclipsis** (unless the verb be in the Past Tense). When the relative a signifies "all that" or "what" it causes eclipsis: as, an áit i n-a ḃ-fuil sé, the place in which he is; a ḃfuil i mBaile-Áṫa-Cliaṫ, all that is in Dublin.

539. **When the relative is governed by a preposition and followed by a verb in the Past Tense, the relative combines with ro** (the old sign of the Past Tense), and

does not eclipse: an áit ar ṫuit Aoḋ, the place where (in which) Hugh fell.

540. The eight verbs which do not admit of the compounds of ro being used before them (see par. 279) form an exception to the last rule: as, an tír i n-a dtáinig sé the country into which he came.

541. In English, when the relative or interrogative pronoun is governed by a preposition, the pronoun very often comes before the governing word: as, *What are you speaking about? The man that he gave the book to is here.* In colloquial Irish it is a very common practice to separate the relative particle from the preposition which governs it ; but instead of using a simple preposition at the end of the sentence, as in English, we use a **prepositional pronoun**. Thus we can say—an fear ag a ḃfuil an ḃó, or more usually, an fear a ḃfuil an ḃó aige,[2] the man who has the cow; an fear ar ḋíolas an capall leis, or an fear ler ḋíolas an capall, the man to whom I sold the horse.

542. The forms darb or darab, darḃ, lerḃ, marḃ, &c., are compounds of a preposition, relative particle;

"ro," the sign of the Past Tense; and ba or buḋ the Past Tense of is.

darḃ = do + a + ro + ba = to whom was.
lerḃ = le + a + ro + ba = with or by whom was.

as, bean darḃ ainm Briġid, a woman whose name was Brigid.

543. As the accusative case of the relative particle has exactly the same form as the nominative, the context must determine, in those tenses in which the verb has no distinct termination for the relative, whether the relative particle is the subject or object of the verb; an fear a ḃuail Seaġán, may mean, The man whom John struck, or The man who struck John.

Translation of the Genitive Case of the English Relative.

544. The Irish relative has no inflection for case; hence, in order to translate the English word "whose" when not an interrogative, **we must use one of the prepositions** (ag, do, i) + **relative particle** + **possessive adjective** (before the noun).

The man whose son was sick.

an fear { dá / agá / i n-a } raiḃ a ṁac tinn.

but dá, agá, or ’gá, i n-a are often shortened to a, go, and ’na; hence the above sentence in colloquial Irish would be —

an fear { a / go / ’na } raiḃ a ṁac tinn.

The woman whose son is sick visited us yesterday.

an ḃean úd { go / ’ġá / &c. } ḃfuil a mac tinn ṫáinig sí ar ċuairt indé ċugainn.

545. **To translate the English relative pronoun when governed by an active participle,** we employ a somewhat similar construction; as—

The hare that the hounds are pursuing.

An girrfiaḋ go bfuil na gaḋair ar a lorg (or ar a ṫóir, or ag tóraiġeaċt air).

The man whom I am striking.

An fear atá agam ’á (d’á, ġá) bualaḋ.

546. The relative a meaning *all that, what*, may itself be genitive; as, trian a raiḃ ann, a third of what were there. “Beir beannaċt óm ċroiḋe ċum a maireann ar ḃánċnoic Éireann óiġ.” “Bear a blessing from my heart to all those who live on the fair hills of Holy Ireland.”

The relative a in this sentence is genitive case being governed by ċum (see par. 603).

1. ↑ The word áit although feminine takes sometimes a masculine pronoun, as, Is deas an áit é. It is a nice place.
   Notice also—
   Is é or Is í mo ḃaraṁail, mo ṫuairim, &c. It is my opinion, &c., &c.
2. ↑ An fear go ḃ-fuil an ḃó aige is also used.

Notes

CHAPTER V.

The Verb.

547. **As a general rule the verb precedes its nominative:** as, tá sé, he is; ḃí an fear ann, the man was there.

Exceptions. (1) When the subject is a relative or an interrogative pronoun the verb comes after its subject; as,

An buaċaill a ḃuaileas mé. The boy who strikes me.

Cad atá agat? What have you?

(2) In a relative sentence the nominative though not a relative pronoun may precede its verb; but as the noun is usually far separated from the verb, a personal pronoun is used as a sort of temporary subject, so that really the noun and its pronoun are nominative to the same verb: as,

An fear atá ’na ṡeasaṁ ag an doras ḃuail sé an capall. The man who is standing at the door struck the horse.

Compare the similar use of the French pronoun CE; or the English “He that shall persevere unto the end, he shall be saved.”

(3) The nominative often precedes its verb in poetry, and sometimes even in prose.

> Raṫ go raiḃ ort! Success to you!

548. **Transitive verbs govern the accusative case; and the usual order of words is, Verb, Subject, Object.** When the subject or object is a relative or an interrogative pronoun it precedes the verb.

> Do rinne Seaġán an bád sain. John made that boat.
> Do ḃuail an buaċaill é. The boy struck him.

For the conditions under which a verb is aspirated or eclipsed, see pars. 21(g) and 26(e).

Use of the Subjunctive Mood.

549. **The most frequent use of the present subjunctive is with the conjunction** GO, **expressing a wish. If the wish be negative use** NÁ **(except with** raiḃ).

Go mbeannuiġiḋ Dia ḋuit!	May God bless you!
Go ḃfóiriḋ Dia orainn!	God help us!
Go dtéiġ tú slán!	Safe home! (may you go safely)!
Nár léigiḋ Dia sin!	May God not allow that! God forbid!
Go raiḃ maiṫ agat!	Thank you!
Ná raiḃ maiṫ agat!	No thanks to you!

550. **The subjunctive is also used after** NÓ GO, GO **or** ACHT GO, **all meaning "until"; and after** MUNA, **"unless," but only when there is an element of doubt.**

Fan anseo go dtagad arís.	Stay here till I come again,
Muna gcreidiḋ siḃ mé.	Unless you believe me.
Muna dtugaiḋ tú an t-airgead dom.	Unless you give me the money.

551. SUL A, SUL FA, SUL MÁ, SUL DÁ, **all meaning "before," when used with reference to an event not considered as an actual occurrence,** take the subjunctive; as,

Imṫiġ leat sul a dtagaiḋ an maiġistir. Be off with you, before the master comes.

552. **The past subjunctive is found after** DÁ **or** MUNA **to express a supposed condition.** They may also take a conditional. In translating the English phrases "if he believed," "if he had believed" (implying that he did not believe), we use dá with the past subjunctive; but as this Tense is identical in form with the Imperfect Tense, it may be said that it is the Imperfect Tense which is employed in this case.

If you were to see Donal on the following day you would pity him.

Dá ḃfeicṫeá Doṁnall ar maidin lá ar n-a ḃáraċ baḋ ṫruaġ leat é.

If you were to give me that book.

Dá dtugṫá-sa doṁsa an leaḃar sin.

If it were true for him. Dá mbaḋ fíor ḋó é.

All the particles given above can also be used with the past subjunctive in reference to past time.

553. In the passive voice the present and past subjunctive are identical in form with the Present and Imperfect Tenses (respectively) of the Indicative Mood.

May it be worn out well. Go gcaiṫtear go maiṫ é.

May it never be worn out. Nár ċaiṫtear go deo é.

If it were worn out. Dá gcaiṫtí é.

Relative Form of the Verb.

554. The relative form of the verb is used after the relative particle a, *when it is the subject of the verb*; (but never after the negative relative naċ, *which* or *who … not*). It has a distinct form in two, and only two, Tenses—the *Present* and the *Future*. In these two Tenses it ends in as or eas. In all the other Tenses the third person singular is used after the relative pronoun. The verb is aspirated after the relative, expressed or understood; but naċ eclipses.

555. The inflection of the relative form in *present* tense is not used in the spoken Language of to-day (except in

proverbs). In Connaught the final S of the relative form is added to the form for the 3rd person singular; *e.g.*, an fear a ḃuaileanns, *the man who strikes;* an ḃuaċaill a ṫuigeanns, *the boy who understands*. The literary form of the relative in the *future* tense is retained in full vigour in Connaught; *e.g.*, an fear a ḃuailfeas, *the man who will strike*. In Munster the relative form has entirely disappeared in both the present and the future tenses (except in proverbs). The 3rd person singular form has taken its place; *e.g.*, an fear a ḃuaileann, *the man who strikes*.

556. As the relative has no inflection for case, ambiguity sometimes arises: *e.g.*, an fear a ḃuail Seaġán, may mean, either *the man who struck John*, or, *the man whom John struck*. The context usually solves the difficulty. The following construction is sometimes employed in order to obviate any ambiguity:—

An fear a ḃuail Seaġán.	The man who struck John.
An fear gur ḃuail Seaġán é.	The man whom John struck.

557. Cionnus, how; nuair, when; and mar, as, are followed by the relative form of the verb in the Present and Future, and the verb is aspirated ; but with cionnus a, cia an ċaoi, cia an nós, cia an modˇ, or any other such locutions, the eclipsing a or i (*in which*) is used before the verb. Before the Past Tense, of course, ar (a + ro) is used. Cionnus a ḃfuil tú? How are you?

Mar is also followed by the ordinary Present and Future.

558. SUL, **"before," has two usages.** It may be followed by the relative forms—*e.g.*, sul ṫiocfas sé, sul ṫáinig sé; or else it may be followed by one of the particles a, má, fá, dá, all of which eclipse.

559. After these particles, the Subjunctive Mood is often used when the event is future and uncertain, or contains a mental element: as—

> Imṫiġ leat sul a ḃfeicidˇ sé tú.
> Be off (with you) before he sees you (*i.e.*, so that he may not see you).

It is not correct to eclipse after the word sul, as sul dtáinig, although sometimes done.

560. The **relative form** of the Present Tense is frequently used as a **historic present,** even when no relative occurs in the sentence: as—

> Nocṫas Eireṁón dóiḃ. Eremon revealed to them.

The Verbal Noun and its Functions.

561. **"Is there an Infinitive in Irish?"** We give here Father O'Leary's answer to his own question, **"Certainly not." In Irish there is neither an infinitive mood nor a present participle, both functions being discharged by the verbal noun.** It follows from this statement that *there is no such thing as a sign of the infinitive mood in Irish.*

Is maiṫ liom siubal.	I wish *to walk*.
Dubras leis gan teaċt.	I told him not[1] *to come*.
Tá ormsa feiteaṁ.	I have *to wait*.
Níor ṁaiṫ liom beannuġaḋ dó.	I did not wish *to salute* him.
Ní ṫig le mála folaṁ seasaṁ.	An empty bag cannot *stand*.

562. In the above examples, and in thousands of similar ones, *the Irish verbal noun is an exact equivalent in sense of the English infinitive, sign and all.* If any one of the prepositions do (or a), le or ċum, be used before the verbal nouns in the above examples, the result is utter nonsense. Now consider the following examples:—

Is maiṫ liom an bóṫar do ṡiubal.	I wish to walk the road.
Is maiṫ liom focal do labairt.	I wish to speak a word.

Dubairt m'atair liom gan an capall do díol.	My father told me not to sell the horse.
Is cóir duit an feur do baint.	You ought to cut the grass.
An féidir leat an caint do tuigsint?	Can you understand the conversation?
Is mian liom litir do sgríobad.	I wish to write a letter.

563. The *preposition* do in the above examples and ones like them between the noun and the verbal noun, is very often, in the spoken language, softened to a: and this a is not heard before or after a vowel: *as*

Is cóir duit comairle 'glacad.
You ought to take advice.

564. In any sentence of the first set of examples there is question of only one thing; *e.g.*, siubaI, teacht, feiteam, &c., but in each of the sentences of the second set *there is a relation between two things: e.g.*, bótar and

siuḃal, focal and laḃairt, &c., and to express this relationship a *preposition is used between the two nouns*. If the relation between the nouns be altered the preposition must also be altered, as—

Tá bóṫar agam le siuḃal,	I have a road to walk.
Tá focaI agam le laḃairt,	I have a word to say.
Tá capall agam le díol,	I have a horse for sale (to sell).
Tá feur agat le baint,	You have grass to cut.

565. There is still another preposition which can be used between the nouns to express another alteration in meaning —

Tá teaċ ċum coṁnuiġṫe agam.	I have a house to live in.
Tá capall ċum marcuiġeaċta aige.	He has a horse to ride on.

If in any one of these sentences the wrong preposition be employed the proper meaning cannot be expressed.

566. **In translating the simple English infinitive of an intransitive verb, use the simple verbal noun in Irish:** as,

He told me to go to Cork.	Dubairt sé liom dul go Corcaiġ.
An empty bag cannot stand.	Ní ṫig le mála folaṁ seasaṁ.
It is impossible to write without learning.	Ní féidir sgríobaḋ gan foġlaim.
I prefer to walk.	Is fearr liom siubal.
He cannot stand.	Ní ṫig leis seasaṁ.
Tell him to sit down.	Abair leis suiḋe síos.
Tell them to go away.	Abair leo imṫeaċt.

567. **When the English intransitive infinitive expresses purpose** (*i.e.*, the gerundial infinitive), use the preposition le.

He came to stay,	Ṫáinig sé le fanaṁaint.
I have a word to say,	Tá focal agam le labairt.
You are to wait,	Tá tú le feiṫeaṁ.
I am to go,	Táim le dul.

568. **When the English verb is transitive and in the simple infinitive** (no purpose implied) **use the preposition** do or the softened form a.

My father told me to buy a horse.	Dubairt m'athair liom capall do ceannach.
You ought to have cut the grass.	Ba cóir duit an feur do baint.
He told me not to shut the door.	Dubairt sé liom gan an doras do dúnad.
Would you like to read this book?	An mian leat an leabar so do léigead?

569. **When the English infinitive is transitive, and also expresses purpose, use either** CUN **or** LE **before the noun which is the object of the English infinitive, and** DO **before the verbal noun in Irish;** cun takes the noun after it in the genitive; le becomes leis before the article, and then causes eclipsis if the noun be singular.

He will come to judge the living and the dead.	Tiocfaiḋ Sé ċum breiṫeaṁnais do ṫaḃairt ar ḃeoḋaiḃ agus ar ṁarḃaiḃ.
He came to buy a horse.	Ṫáinig sé le capall do ċeannaċ.
He went to strike the men.	Ċuaiḋ sé ċun na ḃfear do ḃualaḋ.
He went to strike the man.	Ċuaiḋ sé leis an ḃfear do ḃualaḋ.
He said that to praise the girl.	Duḃairt sé sin leis an gcailín do ṁolaḋ.
He came to buy the horse.	Ṫáinig sé ċum an capaill a ċeannaċ.

570. We can also express the above by means of the preposition do alone, but in this case we must put the verbal noun before the other noun. This latter will, of course, be now in the genitive case, because one noun governs another in the genitive case. This is the *only governing power the verbal noun has in Irish*.

He came to buy the horse.	Ṫáinig sé do ċeannaċ an ċapaill.
He went to strike the man.	Ċuaiḋ sé do ḃualaḋ an ḟir.
Did you come to strike John?	An dtángais do ḃualaḋ Seaġáin?
He came to make fun.	Ṫáinig sé do ḋeunaṁ grinn.
They came to make war.	Ṫángadar do ḋeunaṁ cogaiḋ.

N.B.—This latter method is not often used in the spoken language.

571. **When the English infinitive is passive, and also expresses purpose, use** le.

He is to be hanged.	Tá sé le croċaḋ, or le ḃeiṫ croċta.
The milk is to be drunk.	Tá an bainne le h-ól (&c).
Cows are to be bought at the fair.	Tá ba le ceannaċ ar an aonaċ.
The grass is to be cut.	Tá an feur le baint.
The house is to be sold.	Tá an teaċ le díol.
There is no one to be seen on the road.	Ní ḟuil duine ar biṫ le feicsint ar an mbóṫar.

572. **When a personal pronoun is the object of the English infinitive and the latter does not express purpose,** we translate as follows:—

You ought not to strike me.

Ní cóir ḋuit mé do ḃualaḋ.

Ní cóir ḋuit mo ḃualaḋ.

I wished to strike him.

Ba ṁian liom é do ḃualaḋ.

Ba ṁian liom a ḃualaḋ.

I wish to praise her.	Is mian liom i do ṁoladḋ. Is mian liom a moladḋ.
It is not right to strike them.	Ní cóir iad do ḃualadḋ. Ní cóir a mbualadḋ.
It is a bad thing to wound me.	Is olc an rud mé do ġonadḋ. Is olc an rud mo ġonadḋ.
I cannot understand it.	Ní ṫig liom a ṫuigsint (its understanding).
Could you tell me who it was?	An féidir leat a[2]innsint dom cia ’rḃ’é?
A desire to kill them came upon me.	Ṫáinig mian a marḃṫa ormsa.

In this sentence marḃṫa is the genitive case (after the noun mian) of the verbal noun marḃadḋ.

573. **When the English infinitive governing a personal pronoun expresses purpose, we translate as follows:—**

He came to strike me.

Ṫáinig sé dom ḃualaḋ.
Ṫáinig sé le mé do ḃualaḋ.

I went to strike them.

Ċuaiḋ mé d'á mḃualaḋ.
Ċuaiḋ mé le h-iad do ḃualaḋ.

They are coming to wound us.

Tá siad ag teaċt dár ngonaḋ.
Tá siad at teaċt le sinn do ġonaḋ.

If we used the autonomous form in this last sentence we would get—

They are coming to wound us.

Táṫar ag teaċt dár ngonaḋ.
Táṫar ag teaċt le sinn do ġonaḋ.

574. The English present participle is usually translated by the verbal noun preceded by the preposition ag. If the English present participle expresses "rest" (*e.g.*, *standing*, *sitting*, *lying*, *sleeping*, &c.), the verbal noun must be

preceded by the preposition i (= in) compounded with a suitable possessive adjective (§ 186).

Tá siad ag teaċt.	They are coming.
Bí an buaċaill ’na ṡeasaṁ.	The boy was standing.
Tá an ḃean na seasaṁ.	The woman is standing.

575. The verbal noun in each of the above is dative case, governed by the preposition ag.

576. **When the English present participle governs an objective case, the object if a noun will follow the verbal noun in Irish and will be in the genitive case.**

He is cutting the grass.	Tá sé ag baint an ḟéir.
She was stretching out her hand.	Bí sí ag sínead a láiṁe amaċ.
Are you reading the letter?	Bfuil tú ag léiġead na litre?
Who was beating the child?	Cia ḃí ag bualad an leinḃ?

577. **If the object of the English present participle be a personal pronoun** we cannot translate as in the above sentences, because the pronouns have no genitive case; hence instead of using the personal pronouns **we must employ the possessive adjectives. Possessive adjectives must always precede the nouns which they qualify.**

He is striking me.	Tá sé ’ġam (or agom) ḃualaḋ (lit. he is at my beating).
Are you breaking it?	Ḃfuil tú ’ġá (aga) ḃriseaḋ?
Are you breaking them?	Ḃfuil tú ’ġá (aga) mbriseaḋ?
He is praising us.	Tá sé ġár (ag ár) molaḋ.
Is he not burning them?	Naċ ḃfuil sé ’ġa (aga) ndóġaḋ?
They are not striking her.	Ní ḟuil siad ’ġá (aga) bualaḋ.

Note carefully the initial effects of the possessive adjectives on the verbal nouns after them.

578. **Preceded by** ar, **the Verbal Noun has the force of a Present Participle Passive, denoting a continued or habitual state:** as,

Ní ḟuil an teanga sin ar laḃairt anois.	That language is not spoken now.
Tá an ċruit ar croċaḋ ar an ngéig.	The harp is hanging on the bough.
Sgeul ar leanaṁaint.	A continued story.

In this idiom ar neither aspirates nor eclipses.

579. **With** iar, *after* (eclipsing), **the force of a Perfect Participle**: as,

Iar dteaċt i n-Éirinn do Ṗádraig,
Patrick having come into Ireland.

But in this idiom iar is usually shortened to ar: as, ar dteaċt, &c., the eclipsis being retained. In colloquial language the Verbal Noun is commonly aspirated, not eclipsed, by ar in this usage.

580. Gan **is the word used to express negation with the Verbal Noun**: as, gan teaċt, not to come.

Abair le Brian gan an gort do ṫreaḃaḋ.
Tell Brian not to plough the field.

581. Gan **with the Verbal Noun has the force of the Passive Participle in English with** *un* **prefixed:** as,

Mo ċúig púint olna agus iad gan sníoṁ,
My five pounds of wool, and they *un*spun.

582. **The genitive of the Verbal Noun is often used where a relative or infinitive clause would be used in English:** as,

Níor fágaḋ fear inniste sgéil,
There was not a man left *to tell the tidings*.

Cailín deas crúiḋte na mbó,
The pretty girl *who milks* the cows (lit. of the milking, &c.).

583. The following examples will be studied with advantage. They are culled from Father O'Leary's Mion-

ċaint:—

Someone is striking me.	Táṫar ’ġam ḃualaḋ.
I am being struck.	Táim dom ḃualaḋ.
Someone is striking the dog.	Táṫar ag bualaḋ an ġaḋair.
The dog is being struck.	Tá an gaḋar dá ḃualaḋ.
Someone is breaking the stones.	Táṫar ag briseaḋ na gcloċ.
The stones are being broken.	Tá na cloċa dá mbriseaḋ.
They used to kill people.	Ḃítí ag marḃaḋ daoine.
People used to be killed.	Ḃíoḋ daoine dá marḃaḋ.
They used to buy horses.	Ḃítí ag ceannaċ capall.
Horses used to be bought.	Ḃíoḋ capaill dá gceannaċ.

We (or they) will be digging potatoes.	Béidḟear ag baint ṗrátaoi.
Potatoes will be dug.	Béiḋ prátaoi dá mbaint.
We shall have dug the potatoes.	Béiḋ na prátaoi bainte againn.
If they were breaking stones, they would not be cold.	Dá mbéidḟí ag briseaḋ cloċ ní ḃéidḟí fuar.
If they are breaking stones they are not cold.	Má táṫar ag briseaḋ cloċ ní ḟuiltear fuar.

THE VERB IS.

584. **A definite noun is one limited by its nature or by some accompanying word to a definite, individual or group.**

The following are definite nouns:—

(*a*) The name of a person or place (but not a class name like Sasanaċ).

(*b*) A noun preceded by the definite article.

(*c*) A noun preceded by a demonstrative adjective.

(*d*) A noun preceded by gaċ (because it means each taken individually).

(*e*) A noun followed by any other definite noun in the genitive case.

Any noun not included in the above classes is an **indefinite noun**.

585. **Whenever a definite noun is the subject of a verb in English, and the verb is is employed in translating into Irish, a personal pronoun must immediately precede the definite noun in Irish.**

John is the man. Is é Seaghán an fear

WHEN TO USE THE VERB IS.

586. (*a*) **When the verb "to be" in English is followed by a definite noun, use** is: as,

I am John.	Is mise Seaġán.
It is the man.	Is é an fear é.
You are my brother.	Is tú mo ḋearḃráṫair.
James is the man.	Is é Seumas an fear.
It is the woman of the house.	Is í bean an tiġe í.
Are you not my friend?	Nać tú mo ċara?
He is not my father.	Ní h-é sin m'aṫair.

All sentences of this class are called **"Identification sentences."**

He, she and they in sentences of identity have usually the force of demonstrative pronouns, and are translated by é sin, í sin, iad san.

(*b*) **When the verb "to be" in English is followed by an indefinite noun** is **or** tá **may be used, but with very different meanings.** Whenever we use the verb is in such a sentence we convey the idea of **"classification,"** or *species*: as, Is ainiṁiġe bó. A cow is an animal, &c.; or we *lay stress on what the person or thing is at the time being*, without any thought that he has become what he, or it, is.

For instance, a father, enumerating to a friend the various positions in life of his children, may say, Is ceannuiḋe Seumas, is sagart Seaġán, agus is fear dliġe Miċeál: James is a merchant, John a priest, and Michael is a lawyer. He should not use tá in such a case, as he considers simply what each is at the time being. When tá is used we convey the idea that the person or thing *has become* what he (or it) is, *and that he* (*or it*) *was not always so*. Suppose a father is telling what professions his sons have adopted, he should say, tá Seumas ’na ceannuiḋe, &c. **In such constructions the verb** tá **must be followed by the preposition** i **or** a**, and a suitable possessive adjective.**

(*c*) **The difference between** tá **and** is is well exemplified by the two sentences is fear é and tá sé ’na ḟear, both meaning “He is a man.” If we see a figure approach us in the dark, and after looking closely at it we discover it to be a man, our correct phraseology would then be, is fear é. But when we say tá sé ’na ḟear we convey a very different idea. We mean that the person of whom we are speaking is no longer a boy, he has now reached manhood. If anyone were speaking to you of a person as if he were a

mere boy, and you wished to correct him, you should use the phrase tá sé ’na ḟear.

(*d*) **When the indefinite noun after the verb “to be” in English is qualified by an adjective, the verb is or tá may be used** according to the idea we wish to convey. If we wish to express a **“condition sentence”** (*i.e.*, one which has reference to the state or condition of the subject at the time in question), we use tá; otherwise we employ is, *e.g.*,

He is a small man.	Tá sé ’na ḟear ḃeag.
He is a useful man.	Tá sé ’na ḟear ḟóġanta.
She was a good woman	Ḃí sí ’na mnaoi ṁaiṫ.

(*e*) When the verb is is employed in such sentences *there is a choice of two constructions*. In the second construction (as given in the examples below), we emphasise the adjective, by making it the prominent idea of the sentence. The definite article must be used in the second construction.

Is lá breáġ é.
Is breáġ an lá é. } It is a fine day.

Is oiḋċe ḟuar í.
Is fuar an oiḋċe í. } It is a cold night.

Is bó breáġ í sin.
Is breáġ an bó í sin. } That is a fine cow.

Naċ oileán deas é sin?
Naċ deas an t-oileán é sin? } Isn't that a pretty island?

(*f*) **When a simple adjective follows the verb "to be" in English, either** is **or** tá **may be employed** in translating, as,

Honey is sweet, is milis mil or tá mil milis.
He is strong, is láidir é or tá sé láidir.

587. The beginning of a sentence is naturally the place of greatest prominence, and is usually occupied in Irish by the verb. **When, however, any idea other than that contained in the verb is to be emphasised, it is placed immediately after the verb** is, **and the rest of the sentence is thrown into the relative form.**

For example, “We went to Derry yesterday,” would be generally translated: Ċuaiḋ sinn go Doire indé: but it may also take the following forms according to the word emphasised.

We went to Derry yesterday.	Is sinne do ċuaiḋ go Doire indé.
We went to *Derry* yesterday.	Is go Doire do ċuaiḋ sinn indé.
We went to Derry *yesterday*.	Is indé do ċuaiḋ sinn go Doire.

588.

The Verb IS is then used.

(1)	To express	**Identity,**	*e.g.,*	Is é Conn an rí.
(2)	„	**Classification,**	„	Is rí Conn.
(3)	„	**Emphasis,**	„	Is indé do ċuaiḋ sinn go Doire.

POSITION OF WORDS WITH IS.

589. **The predicate of the sentence always follows** IS: as,

Dermot is a man,	Is fear Diarmuid.
They are children,	Is páisdí iad.
John is a priest,	Is sagart Seaġán.
Coal is black,	Is dub gual.
A cow is an animal,	Is ainiṁíġe bó.
Turf is not coal,	Ní gual móin.
Is it a man?	An fear é?

590. **Sentences of Identification**—*e.g.*, *Conn is the king*—**form an apparent exception.** The fact is that in this sentence either the word "Conn" or "the king" may be the *logical predicate*. In English "king" is the *grammatical predicate*, but in Irish it is the *grammatical subject*, and "Conn" is the *grammatical predicate*. Hence the sentence will be, Is é Conn an rí.

591. In such sentences, when two nouns or a pronoun and noun are connected by the verb is, as a general rule, **the more particular and individual of the two is made grammatical predicate** in Irish. *The converse usually holds in English.* For instance, we say in English "I am the messenger," but in Irish is mise an teaċtaire (lit. "the messenger is I"). Likewise with the following:—

You are the man, Is tú an fear.

He is the master, Is é sin an maiġistir.

We are the boys, Is sinne na buaċaillí.

592. Sentences like "It is Donal," "It is the messenger," &c., are translated is é Doṁnall é, is é an ceaċtaire é. Here "é Doṁnall" and "é an teaċtaire" are the grammatical predicates, and the second é in each case is the subject.

It is the master, Is <u>é an maiġistir</u> é.

He is the master, Is <u>é sin</u> an maiǵistir.

(The underlined words are the predicates.)

593. In recent times we often find such sentences as "Is é an maiġistir," "Is é an fear," &c., for "It is the master," "It is the man," in which the last é, the subject of the sentence, is omitted.

Translation of the English Secondary Tenses.

594. The English **Present Perfect Tense** is translated by means of the Present Tense of the verb tá, followed by d' éis (or tar éis) and the verbal noun. When d' éis comes immediately before the verbal noun, the latter will be

in the genitive case; but when d’ éis is separated from the verbal noun by the object of the English verb, the verbal noun will be preceded by the preposition do, and will be dative case.

He wrote,	Do sgríoḃ sé.
He has just written,	Tá sé d’ éis sgríoḃṫa.
He broke the window,	Do ḃris sé an ḟuinneog.
He has broken the window,	Tá sé d’ éis na fuinneoige do ḃriseaḋ.
He has just died,	Tá sé d’ éis báis d’ḟaġáil.

595. The word “*just*” in these sentences is not translated into Irish, and the word after d’ éis is in the genitive case.

596. When the English verb is transitive there is another very neat method of translating the secondary tenses. As already stated, there is no verb “to have” in Irish: its place is supplied by the verb tá and the preposition ag. Thus, “*I have a book*” is, Tá leaḃar agam. A similar construction may be used in translating the secondary tenses of an English transitive verb. The following sentences will illustrate the construction:—

I have written the letter,	Tá an litir sgríobṫa agam.
I have struck him,	Tá sé buailte agam.
Have you done it yet?	Ḃfuil sé deunta agat fós?
I have broken the stick,	Tá an maide briste agam.

597. The English **Pluperfect** and **Future Perfect** are translated in the same manner as the Present Perfect, except that the Past and Future Tenses respectively of TÁ must be used instead of the Present, as above. The following examples will illustrate the construction;—

He died,	Fuair sé bás.
He had just died,	Ḃí sé d’ báis d’ ḟaġáil.
He had broken the chair,	Ḃí sé d’ éis na caṫaoireac do ḃriseaḋ. Ḃí an ċaṫaoir briste aige.

The window has just been broken by a stone,

Tátar d’ éis na fuinneoige do ḃriseaḋ le cloiċ.

I had written the letter,

Ḃí an litir sgríoḃta agam.

Ḃíos d’ éis na litre do sgríoḃaḋ.

I shall have finished my work before you will be ready,

Béad d’ éis críċe do ċur ar mo ċuid oibre sul a mbéir réiḋ (ullaṁ),

Béiḋ mo ċuid oibre críoċnuiġte agam sul a mbéir réiḋ.

Prepositions after Verbs.

598. We give here a few verbs which require a preposition after them in Irish, although they require none in English:—

Géillim do,	I obey.
Uṁluiġim do,	„
Cuidiġim le,	I assist.
Innsim do, Deirim le,	I tell.
Tugaim ar	I persuade, prevail over.
Tugaim fá,	I endeavour.
Iarraim ar,	I ask (beseech).
Fiafruiġim de,	I ask (enquire).
Geallaim do,	I promise.
Beannuiġim do,	I salute.

Cuiṁniġim ar,	I remember.
Beirim ar,	I catch, I overtake.
Gleusaim ar,	I prepare (gleus ort, get ready).
léigim do,	I allow, permit.
Coṁairliġim do,	I advise.
Maiṫim do,	I forgive, pardon.
Freagraim do,	I answer.
Fóirim ar,	I help.
Éiriġeann liom,	I succeed (lit. It arises with me).
Tigim le,	I confirm, I corroborate.
Tig liom	I can.
Sgaoilim do,	I loose.
Impiġim ar,	I beg, I beseech.
Taiṫniġim le,	I please.

599. Many verbs require prepositions different from those required by their English equivalents.

Laḃraim ar,	I speak of.
Fanaim le,	I wait for.
Tráċtaim ar,	I treat of.
Ceilim ar,	I conceal from.
Sgaraim le,	I separate from.
Cuirim fios ar,	I send for.
Laḃraim le,	I speak to.
Deirim le,	I say to.
Ar … le,	say, said to (ar is used only in quotation).

Ḃeirim aġaiḋ ar,	I face (for) (a place).
Deunaim magaḋ fá,	I make fun of, I mock.
Criṫim fá,	I tremble at.
Bainim le (also do),	I belong to, I appertain to.
Beirim buaiḋ ar,	I win a victory over.
Táim boḋruiġṫe ag,	I am bothered with.
Éistim le,	I listen to.
Dar le,	I t seems to.
Glaoiḋim ar	I call for.
Cinnim ar,	I excel or surpass in.
Guiḋim ar,	I pray for; also, I beseech. (guiḋ orainn, pray for us.)
Feuċ ar,	look at (feuċ orṫa, Look at them; feuċ iad, Examine or try them).
Fágaim slán ag,	I bid farewell *to*.
Leanaim le,	I stick to.
Beirim ar … ar	I take hold of … by: as, He caught me by the hand.

Rug sé ar láiṁ orm. Catch her by the hand, Beir ar láiṁ uiṙti.

Díolaim le … ar, I sell to … for. He sold me a cow for £10. Ḋíol sé bó liom ar ḋeiċ bpúntaiḃ.

Díolaim as, I pay for.

Caiṫim le, I throw at.

Cromaim ar,
tosnuiġim ar,
luiġim ar, I begin to (do something).

The Negative Adverb—Not,

600. Young students experience great difficulty in translating the English negative adverb—**“not.”** We here give the various ways of translating “not.”

Not, with the **Imperative mood,** is translated by ná.

„ „ **Subjunctive** „ „ nár.

„ „ **Verbal noun** „ gan.

Indicative Mood:

- Past Tense:
  - statement, níor or ċar.
  - question, nár or naċar.
- All other tenses:
  - statement, ní or ċa.
  - question, naċ, ná.

“If … not” is translated by muna:[3] **if the verb be in the past tense use** munar.

All the above forms are used in principal sentences **only**. In **dependent sentences “that … not” is always translated by** naċ or ná, except in the **past tense, indicative mood**, when nár or naċar must be used.

Ní, **aspirates;** ċa, **eclipses.** Ċa **becomes** ċan before is and fuil: *e.g.* ċan mé, *It is not I.*

How to answer a question. Yes — No.

601. (*a*) In Irish there are no fixed words for “Yes” or “No.” **As a general rule in replying to questions, “Yes” or “No” is translated by using the same verb and tense as has been employed in the question.** The subject of the verb used in reply need not be expressed, except when it is contained in the verb ending. In English we frequently use a double reply, as “Yes, I will.” “No, I was not,” &c. In Irish we use only one reply.

Ḃfuil tú tinn? Táim.	Are you sick? Yes, or I am.
Raiḃ sé annsoin? Ní raiḃ.	Was he there ? No.
An ḃfaca tú Seaġán? Ní ḟaca or ní ḟacas.	Did you see John ? No.
An ḃfaca sé an teaċ? Ċonnaic.	Did he see the house? He did.
An dtuigeann tú? Tuigim.	Do you understand ? Yes.
An dtiocfaiḋ tú? Ní ṫiocfad.	Will you come? No, I will not.

(*b*) When the question has been asked with any part of the verb is, expressed or understood, followed by a **definite** noun, the English subject must be used in the answer, as also must the verb, except when the answer is negative.

An tú an fear? Ní mise.	Are you the man? No.
Naċ é sin an fear? Is é.	Is not he the man ? Yes, he is.
Ar ḃ'é sin Seaġán? Níor ḃ'é.	Was that John? No, it was not.

Notice also the following:—

FIRST SPEAKER.	SECOND SPEAKER.
Is mise an teaċtaire.	An tú?
I am the messenger.	*Are you?*
Ní h-é sin ár sagart.	Naċ é?
He is not our priest.	*Isn't he?*
Is é an fear é.	Ní h-é.
It is the man.	*It is not.*

(*c*) Whenever the question is asked by any part of the verb is, followed by an **indefinite** predicate, the word "Yes" is usually translated by repeating the verb and the indefinite predicate, as—

Nać fuar an lá é? Is fuar.	Isn't it a cold day? Yes, or It is.
Nać maiṫ é? Is maiṫ.	Is it not good? Yes, or It is.
An aige atá an t-airgead? Is aige.	Is it he who has the money? Yes.

But in this case the answer may also be correctly given by using the neuter pronoun eaḋ. Is eaḋ (or ’seaḋ for “yes;” ní h-eaḋ for “no.”

An madaḋ é sin? Ní h-eaḋ.	Is that a dog ? No.
An Sasanać é? ’Seaḋ.	Is he an Englishman? Yes.
Nać maiṫ é? ’Seaḋ.	Isn’t it good ? It is.

(*d*) When the question is asked with “who” or “what,” the subject alone is used in the answer, and if the subject be a personal pronoun the emphatic form will be used, as—

Cia rinne é sin? Mise.	Who did that? I did.

1. ↑ *Not* before the English infinitive is translated by gan (a prep., without).

2. ↑ Whenever the object of the verbal noun is a phrase, it cannot be put in the genitive case, but the possessive adjective a is used before the verbal noun.
3. ↑ Pronounced morru.

Notes

CHAPTER VI.

The Preposition.

602. As a general rule **the simple prepositions govern a dative case**, and precede the words which they govern: as,

Ṫáinig sé ó Ċorcaiġ.	He came from Cork.
Ṫug sé an t-uḃall do'n ṁnaoi.	He gave the apple to the woman.

Exceptions. (1) The preposition idir, "*between*," governs the accusative case: as, idir Corcaiġ agus Luimneaċ, between Cork and Limerick.

(2) Go dtí,[1] meaning "*to*" (*motion*), is followed by the nominative case.

Ċuaiḋ sé go dtí an teaċ. He went to the house.

(3) The preposition gan, "*without*," governs the dative in the singular, but the accusative in the plural: as,

Tá sé gan ċéill.	He is without sense.
Gan ár gcáirde.	Without our friends.

603. The words timċeall (*around*) [2]trasna or treasna (*across*), cois (*beside*), fad (*along*), ċum[3] or ċun (*towards*), toisg (*owing to*), dála, dálta, and [iomṫúsa] (*as to*, or *concerning*), although really nouns, are used where prepositions are used in English. Being nouns, **they are followed by the genitive case**.

Ḃuail sé fad na sróine é.	He struck him along the nose.
An mbéiḋ tú ag dul ċum an aonaiġ i mbáraċ?	Will you be going to (towards) the fair tomorrow?
Do riṫ sé timċeall na h-áite seo.	He ran around this place.
Do ċuadar trasna an ġuirt eorna.	They went across the field of barley.

For the so-called compound prepositions see par. 608, 6&c.

604. The prepositions i (*in*) and le (*with*) become ins and leis before the article: *e.g.*, ins an leabar *in the book*; leis an bfear, *with the man*. In Munster ó (*from*), de (*off, from*), do (*to*), aige (= ag, *at, with*), and some others take s before the plural article—ó sna fearaib, *from the men*; do sna buaib, *to the cows*.

605. **The simple prepositions cause aspiration when the article is not used with them:** as, Ar bárr an chnuic. On the top of the hill. Fuair sé ó fhear an tighe é. He got it from the man of the house.

Exceptions (1) The prepositions ag, *at*; le, *with*; as, *out*: go, *to*, cause neither aspiration nor eclipsis; as, Do thuit sé le Goll. He fell by Goll. Chuaid sé go Baile-Átha-Cliath. He went to Dublin.

Gan, without, may aspirate or not.

(2) The preposition i or a, *in*, causes eclipsis even without the article: as, Bhí sé i gCorcaigh. He was in Cork.

606. **The simple prepositions, when followed by the article and a noun in the singular number, usually cause**

eclipsis: as, ar an mbárr, on the top; ó ’n ḃfear, from the man; ’san mbaile, at home.

Exceptions. (1) The prepositions do,[4] to, and de, of, off, from, when followed by the article, usually cause aspiration, though in some places eclipsis takes place. Aspiration is the more common practice: do ’n ḟear, to the man; de’n ṁnaoi, from the woman. They prefix t to s; as, Ṫug sé do’n tsagart é. He gave it to the priest. Sa (=ins an) usually aspirates in Munster; sa ḃosga ṁor, *in the big box*.

(2) When gan, *without*, is followed by the article it produces no change in the initial consonant following: as, gan an fíon, without the wine; but if the following noun be masculine and begin with a vowel, or be feminine beginning with s, t is prefixed: as, gan an t-eun, without the bird; gan an tsúil, without the eye.

In the Northern dialect aspiration takes place after the preposition and the article.

607. When a simple preposition ending in a vowel comes before the possessive adjective a (*his*, *her*, or *their*), or the possessive ár, *our*, and ḃur, *your*, the letter n is inserted before the possessive: as, le n-a láiṁ, by his hand; tré n-a mbosaiḃ), through their palms; le n-ár gcuid, with (or by) our portion; le nḃur dtoil, with your permission.

Except the prepositions do and de, which become d'.

Whenever go or le comes before any other word beginning with a vowel the letter h is usually inserted: as, ó ṁaidin go h-oiḋċe, from morning till night; go h-Albain, to Scotland; le h-eagla, with fear. (See par. 29.)

608. In Irish certain nouns preceded by prepositions have often the force of English prepositions. **As nouns they are, of course, followed by a genitive case, unless a preposition comes between them and the following noun, when the dative case naturally follows.** Such locutions are styled in most grammars "Compound Prepositions," and to account for their construction they give the rule "*Compound Prepositions are followed by the genitive case*."

609. We give here a fairly full list of such phrases employed in Modern Irish.

i ḃfarraḋ,	along with; on the side of.
i ḃfiaḋnuise, i láṫair, os cóṁair,	in the presence of.
os coinne,	before; face to face.
as uċt, ar son,	for the sake of, for the love of
ar sgáṫ,	under the pretext of.
i ḃfoċair, i dteannta,	along with, in company with.
i dtaoḃ,	concerning ; with regard to.
i gceann,	at the end of.
fé ḋéin, i gcoinne,	for, (in the sense of going *for*).
fé ḋéin,	towards,
i measg,	among, amongst.

ar aġaiḋ,	opposite.
i n-aġaiḋ,	against.
ar feaḋ,	throughout (used of time).
le h-easba,	for want of.
ar fud,	throughout (used of space)
i gcóir, (i gcoṁoir),	for, for the benefit of.
ar ċúl,	behind, at the back of.
i ndiaiḋ,	after (used of *place*).
tar éis, d’éis,	after (used of time).
i gcoinniḃ, i gcoinne,	against.
i gcúrsaiḋe,	concerning, about.
ċun, (ċum),	to, towards.
d’ ionnsaiḋe, d’ ionnsaiġiḋ,	towards.
le cois, cois,	beside, by the side of (a sea, a river, &c.)

i n-eudan,	against,
do réir,	according to.
os cionn,	over, above.
tar ċeann,	beyond, in preference to.
le h-ais,	beside, by the side of.
i gcaiṫeaṁ, i riṫ,	during.
i n-aindeoin, i n-aiṁḋeoin,	in spite of.
le h-aġaiḋ,	for, for the use of.
i n-aice,	near.

610.

Some of them are followed by Prepositions.

láiṁ le,	near, beside.
i n-gar do,	near.
timċeall ar,	around (*and touching*).
mar ġeall an,	on account of.
mar aon le,	along with, together with.
i n-éinḟeaċt le, i n-aon-diġe le,	together with, at the same time as.

611.

Examples—(1) Nouns.

Do ċuir sé os cionn an dorais é.	He put it over the door.
Ċonnac i n-aice an tobair iad	I saw them near the well.
Do riṫ an gaḋar i ndiaiḋ an tsionnaiġ.	The hound ran after the fox.
Cia ḃí i ḃfoċair Ṡeumais?	Who was along with James?
Do ṫug sé ḋom an capall so le h-aġaiḋ an tsagairt.	He gave me this horse for the priest.
Tiocfad ar ais d’ éis an tsaṁraiḋ.	I shall come back after the summer.
Ní ḟuil leiġeas ar biṫ i n-aġaiḋ an ḃáis.	There is no remedy against death.
Do ċuaiḋ sé fá ḋéin na gcapall.	He went for the horses.

Ar feaḋ an lae.	Throughout the day.
Ar fud na tíre.	Throughout the country.
Do réir an leaḃair seo.	According to this book.
Tá sé le cois na fairrge.	He is beside the sea.
Do ċuir sé an lúb timċeall ar mo ċeann.	He put the loop around my head.

612. **(2) Pronouns.**

Ṫáinig sé im ḋiaiḋ.	He came after me.
Ná téiġ ’na ndiaiḋ seo.	Do not go after these.
Cia ḃí ’na ḟoċair?	Who was along with him?
Deunfad é sin ar do ṡon.	I shall do that for your sake.
Ar ċeannuiġis é seo lem aġaiḋ?	Did you buy this one for me?
Ḃíos ar a n-aġaiḋ.	I was opposite them.
Tá an ḟuiseóg os ár gcionn.	The lark is above us.
An raiḃ tú i n-ár n-aice (i n-aice linn)?	Were you near us?
Ḃí sé i n-aice liom.	He was near me.
Ṫáinig siad im aġaiḋ.	They came against me.

Translation of the Preposition “For.”

613. (*a*) When “for” means “to bring,” “to fetch,” use fá ḋéin, a g-coinne, or ag iarraiḋ, followed by a genitive case; or ag triall ar: as,

Go for the horse. Téiġ ag triall ar an gcapall.

He went for John. Ċuaiḋ sé fé ḋéin Ṡeaġáin.

(*b*) When “*for*” means “to oblige,” “to please,” use do, followed by the dative case: as,

Do that for him. Deun sin dó.

Here is your book for you. ’Seo ḋuit do leaḃar.

Use do to translate “for” in the phrases “good for,” “bad for,” “better for,” &c: as,

This is bad for you. Is olc ḋuit é seo.

(*c*) When “*for*” means “for the use of,” use le h-aġaiḋ, followed by a genitive case, or do with dative.

I bought this for the priest.	Ċeannuiġeas é seo le h-aġaiḋ an tsagairt (do'n tsagart).
He gave me money for you.	Ṫug sé airgead dom led' aġaiḋ.

(*d*) When "for" means "duration of time" use le, with the dative case, if the time be *past*, but ar feaḋ or go ceann, with the genitive case, if the time be *future*. In either case past and future are to be understood, not with regard to present time, but to the time of the action described.

(1)	He had been there for a year when I came.	Ḃí sé ann le bliaḋain nuair ṫáinig mé.
(2)	He stayed there for a year.	D' fán sé ann ar feaḋ (go ceann) bliaḋna

In the first sentence the year is supposed to be completed at the time we are speaking about, and is, therefore, past with regard to the time we are describing.

In the second sentence the time at which the action of staying (if we be allowed to use the word "action") took place at the very beginning of the year that he spent there. The year itself came after the time we are describing; therefore it is future with regard to that time.

It will be a great assistance to the student to remember that ar feaḋ or go ceann are used when in the English sentence the fact is merely stated, as in sentence (2); and that le is used when a secondary tense ought to be used in the English sentence, as in sentence (1).

(*e*) When "*for*" means "for the sake of," use ar son followed by a genitive case.

He toiled for a little gold. Ṡaoṫruiġ sé ar son beagáin óir.

(*f*) When "*for*" is used in connection with "buying" or "selling," use ar followed by a dative case.

He bought it for a pound. Ċeannuiġ sé ar punt é.

I sold it for a shilling. Ḋíolas ar sgilling é.

(*g*) "*For*" after the English verb "ask" is not translated in Irish.

He asked me for a book. D' iarr sé leaḃar orm.

Ask that man for it. Iarr ar an ḃfear soin é.

(*h*) "*For*" after the word "desire" (dúil) is usually translated by i (=in): as, Desire for gold, dúil i n-ór or, dúil ins an ór.

(*i*) The English phrase "*only for*" very often means "were it not for," "had it not been for," and is translated by muna mbiaḋ, followed by a nominative.

Only for John the horse would be dead now. — Mura mbeaḋ Seaġán do ḃeaḋ an capall marḃ anois.

614.

Note the following Examples.

I have a question *for you*.	Tá ceist agam ort.
To play *for* (a wager).	Imirt ar (ġeall).
To send *for*.	Fios do ċur … ar.
A cure *for* sickness.	Leiġeas i n-aġaiḋ tinnis. „ ar tinneas.
To wait *for*.	Fanaṁaint le.
For your life, don't tell.	Ar d' anam, ná h-innis.
He faced *for* the river.	Ṫug sé a aġaiḋ ar an ḃainn.
They fought *for* (*about*) the Fiannship.	Ṫroideadar um an ḃFiannuiġeaċt.
Don't blame him *for* it.	Ná cuir a ṁilleán air (its blame on him).
I have great respect *for you*.	Tá meas mór agam ort.
This coat is too big *for me*.	Tá an cóta so ró-ṁór ḋom.
What shall we have *for* dinner?	Caidé ḃias againn ar ár ndinneur?

It is as good for you to do your best. — Tá sé coṁ maiṫ agat do ḋíċeall do ḋeunaṁ.

615.

Translation of the Preposition "Of."

(*a*) Whenever "*of*" is equivalent to the English possessive case, translate it by the genitive case in Irish.

The son of the man. — Mac an ḟir.

The house of the priest. — Teaċ an tsagairt.

There are cases in which the English "of," although not equivalent to the possessive case, is translated by the genitive in Irish.

The man of the house. — Fear an tiġe.

A stone of meal. — Cloċ ṁine.

(*b*) Whenever "*of*" describes the material of which a thing is composed, or the contents of a body, use the genitive case.

A ring of iron.	Fáinne iarainn.
A cup of milk.	Cupán bainne.
A glass of water.	Gloine uisge.

(*c*) When "*of*" comes after a numeral, or a noun expressing a part of a whole, use de with the dative; but if the word after "*of*" in English be a *personal pronoun*, use one of the compounds of ag with the personal pronouns.

The first day of the week.	An ċeud lá de'n tseaċtṁain.
One of our hounds.	Ceann d' ár ngaḋraiḃ.
Many of the nobles.	Mórán de na h-uaisliḃ.
One of us was there.	Ḃí duine againn ann
Some of them.	Cuid aca.
One of these (persons).	Duine aca so.

A leaṫ is used for "*half of it*" or "*half of them*."

(*d*) When "*of*" follows "*which*," use de with nouns, and ag with pronouns.

Which of the men?	Cia (ciaca) de na fearaiḃ?
Which of us?	Cia againn?

(*e*) When "*of*" means "*about*" use timċioll or fá.

They were talking of the matter. Ḃíodar ag caint timċioll an ruda.

(*f*) "*Of*" after the English verb "ask," "inquire," is translated by de.

Ask that of John. Fiafruiġ sin de Seaġán.

(*g*) When "*of*" expresses "*the means*" or "*instrument*" use le or de.

He died of old age.	Fuair sé bás le sean-aois.
He died of hunger.	Fuair sé bás leis an ocras.
He died of a seven days' sickness.	Fuair sé bás de galar seaċt lá.

(*h*) Both of us. Sinn araon.

Both of you. Siḃ araon.

Both of them. Siad araon, iad araon.

616.

Further Examples.

He is ignorant *of* Irish.	Tá sé ainḃfiosac ins an nGaeḋilig.
The like of him.	A leiṫéid (his like).
Such a thing as this.	A leiṫéid seo de rud.
Don't be afraid *of me*.	Ná bíoḋ eagla ort róṁam.
A friend *of mine*.	Cara ḋom.
A friend of yours.	Cara ḋuit.
A horse *of mine*.	Capall liom.
A horse of Brian’s.	Capall le Brian.
I have no doubt *of it*.	Ní ḟuil aṁras agam air.
A man of great strength.	Fear is mór neart.
Oisin of mighty strength and vigour.	Oisín ba ṫreun neart a’s luṫ.

(Ba is the past tense of is in the previous sentence.)

I think much of it.	Tá meas mór agam air.

1. ↑ Go dtí is really a corrupted form of the old subjunctive mood of the verb tigim, I come; so that the noun after go dtí was *formerly nominative* case to the verb.
2. ↑ The meanings given in parenthesis are the usual English equivalents, *not the real meaning of the words*.
3. ↑ The m in this word is pronounced like n.
4. ↑ Go or go dtí is usually used for “to” when *motion to* is implied (the Latin acc. of motion). do is usually used for “to” when no motion is implied (the Latin *dative*).

Notes

CHAPTER VII.

Classification of the Uses of the Prepositions.

617. AG, AT.

1. **To denote possession** (*a*) with tá.

Tá sgian agam.	I have a knife.
Tá aiṫne agam ar an ḃfear soin.	I know that man.

(*b*) With other verbs:

Ċoimeád sé an sgian aige féin.	He kept the knife for himself.
D’ ḟág sé aca iad	He left them to them.

2. It is used in a **partitive sense,** of them, &c

Aon duine aca.	Anyone of them
Gaċ aon aca.	Each one of them.

3. **With verbal nouns to translate the English present participle:**

(*a*) active — Tá sé ag bualaḋ an ḃuaċalla.
He is beating the boy.

(*b*) passive — Tá an buaċaill agá (’ġá) ḃualaḋ.
The boy is being beaten.

4. **With verbal nouns followed by** do, meaning **“while.”**

Ag dul dóiḃ. While they were going.

5. To express the agent or cause with passive verbs.

Tá an ċloc ġá (agá) tógáil ag Séamus. The stone is being raised by James.

The English preposition *at* when used with assemblies, *e.g.* market, fair, school, &c, is usually translated by ar.

618. AR, ON, UPON.

1. Literal use: ar an mbord, on the table.

2. In adverbial phrases:

(*a*) TIME.

ar ball, just now, by and by.

ar feaḋ, during.

lá ar lá, day by day.

ar maidin, in the morning.

ar uairiḃ, by times.

ar an láṫair, immediately.

(*b*) PLACE.

ar biṫ, in existence, at all.

ar ċúl, behind.

ar lear, ar fairrge, ar muir, } at sea.

ar sgoil, in school.

ar fud, throughout,

ar neaṁ, in heaven.

ar lár, on the ground.

ar bord, on board.

ar tí, on the point of.

ar fad, in length.

ar talaṁ, ar talṁain, } on earth.

ar ḟaid,[1] lengthwise.

ar an doras, by (through) the door.

trí troiġte { ar fad (faid), three feet long. / ar leiṫead, „ wide. / ar leiṫead, „ high. / ar doiṁne, „ deep.

(*c*) CAUSE.

ar an áḋbar soin, for that reason, therefore.

ar son, for the sake of.

ar eagla go, for fear that.

ar éigin, hardly, by compulsion.

ar leaṫtrom, under oppression.

ar toil, according to the will of.

ar toġa, at the choice of.

(*d*) MANNER AND CONDITION.

ar ċor ar biṫ, on any condition.

ar an móḋ, in the manner.

ar aġaiḋ, forward.

aġaiḋ ar aġaiḋ, face to face.

leaṫ ar leaṫ, side by side.

ar lasaḋ, ablaze.

ar ċumas, in the power of.

beagán ar beagán, little by little.

ar cáirde, on credit.

ar deilḃ, in the form of.

ar siuḃal, in progress.

ar a laiġead, at least.

ar ais, back.

ar gcúl, backwards.

ar trasna, breadthwise.

ar fán
ar seaċrán, } astray.

ar meisge, drunk.

ar sodar, trotting.

ar iasaċt, on loan.

3. In numbers:

Trí ar ḟiċid, 23.
Tríoṁad ar ḟiċid, 23rd.

4. (*a*) Before the verbal noun, which it eclipses or aspirates to form the past participle active.

Ar dúnadh an dorais dóibh d' imtigeadar. — Having shut the door, they went away.

(*b*) With the possessive adjective a and verbal noun to form perfect participle passive.

Ar n-a chur i n-eagar ag, Edited by.

Ar n-a chur amach ag Connradh na Gaedhilge, Published by the Gaelic League.

5. Emotions felt by a person:

Care, sorrow, &c.	Tá imnidhe, bpón orm.
Thirst, hunger, need, sickness.	Tá tart, ocras, easbaidh, tinneas orm.
Fear.	Tá eagla, faitchíos orm.
Joy.	Tá lúthgáir orm.

6. In phrases:

Tiodlacad ar, favour (conferred) *on*.

Cion, gean ar, affection *for*.

Eolas, fios, aitne ar, knowledge *of*, acquaintance *with*.

Gráin ar, horror of, or disgust with.

Tá amras agam air, I suspect him.

Cumact ar, power over.

Buaid ar, victory over.

onóir ar, honour (given) to.

Tá baogal ar, there is danger.

Cuimne ar, remembrance *of*.

Casaoid ar, Gearán ar, } complaint against.

Fuat ar, hatred of.

Fiaċ ar, debt *due from*.

Cumas ar, power *over*, capacity *for*.

Fiaċa ar, claim upon.

De ċeangal ar, D' fiaċaib ar, D' ualaċ } of obligation *on*.

In the above phrases the agent is expressed by ar where possible, tá gráḋ, gean, eolas, cuiṁne, &c., agat ort.

7. AR is used after various classes of verbs.

(*a*) Verbs of motion upon or against (*striking, inflicting*, &c.).

Imrim pian ar.	I punish.
Teilgim ar (le).	I throw at.
Casaḋ ar. Ṫárla ar.	Met.
Casaḋ an fear orm.	I met the man.
Do ġaḃ sé de ċloċaiḃ orṫa.	He threw stones at them.

(*b*) After the verb ḂEIRIM.

Ḃeirim ar.	I call (name), (ar before person), induce, persuade, compel a person (to do something).
Ḃeirim iarraċt ar.	I attempt (something or to do something).
Ḃeirim díol ar.	I requite, repay (a person).
Ḃeirim[2] fá n-deara ar,	I cause, make (a person do something).
Ḃeirim gráḋ ar.	I love (fall in love with), &c.
Ḃeirim míniuġaḋ ar.	I explain.

(*c*) After the verb BEIRIM.

Beirim ar … ar.	I catch, seize (a person) by (the hand, &c.).
Beirim ar.	I overtake, I catch.
Beirim breiṫeaṁnas ar,	I judge, pass judgment on.
Beirim buaiḋ ar.	I conquer.

(*d*) **After verbs of Praying, Beseeching, Appealing to.**

Iarraim ar. I ask, entreat (a person).

Guiḋim ar. I pray *for* (sometimes I pray *to*); but generally guiḋim ċum Dé ar son &c. I pray to God for.

Impiġim ar. I beseech.

(*e*) **After verbs of Speaking about, Thinking of, Treating of, Writing of, &c.**

Laḃraim ar, I speak of. Smuainim ar, I think of.

Tpáċtaim ar, I treat of.

Cuiṁniġim ar, I remember. Sgríoḃaim ar, I write of, or about.

(*f*) Verbs of **looking at:**

Feuċaim ar or dearcaim ar. I look at.

(*g*) Verbs of **threatening, complaining, offending, displeasing,** &c.

Bagraim ar. I threaten.

Goillim ar. I am troublesome to.

Ġeiḃim loċt ar. I find fault with.

(*h*) **Verbs of concealing, neglecting, hindering, forbidding, refusing,** &c.

Ceilim ar.	I conceal from.
Toirmeasgaim ar.	I hinder or forbid.
Failliġim ar.	I neglect.

(*i*) Verbs of **protecting, guarding, guaranteeing against.**

Seaċain tú féin ar an dtrucaill sin.	Take care of yourself from that car.
Seaċain do láṁ ar an gcloiċ sin.	Take care! That stone will hurt your hand.

8. (*a*) Cuirim is used with verbal nouns and adverbial phrases beginning with ar:

Cuirim ar criṫ.	I put in a tremble.
Cuirim ar coimeád.	I put on one's guard.
Cuirim ar seaċrán.	I set astray.
Cuirim ar cáirde.	I put off, delay, postpone.
Cuirim ar gcúl.	I put aside.
Cuirim ar neiṁníḋ.	I reduce to nothing, I annihilate.

(*b*) Also with many nouns:—

Cuirim ceist ar.	I question.
Cuirim comaoin ar.	I do a kindness to.
Cuirim / Caiṫim } crainn ar (ṫar).	I cast lots for.
Cuirim cuma ar.	I arrange.
Cuirim gairm (fios) ar.	I send for.
Cuirim láṁ ar.	I set about.
Cuirim leiġeas ar.	I apply a remedy to.
Cuirim luiḋeaċan ar.	I lay a snare for.
Cuirim moill ar.	I delay.
Cuirim toirmeasg ar.	I hinder.
Cuirim impiḋe ar.	I beseech.

9. Ġním is used with many nouns meaning “I inflict … on.”

Ġním bagar ar.	I threaten.
Ġním buaiḋreaḋ ar.	I trouble.
Ġním casaoid ar.	I complain of.
Ġním eugcóir ar.	I wrong.
Ġním feall ar.	I act treacherously towards.
Ġním smaċt ar.	I exercise authority over, I restrain.
Ġním breiṫeaṁnas ar.	I judge, pass judgment upon.
Ġním faire ar.	I watch.

619.

AS, OUT OF, FROM.

1. **Literal use:** out of, from, &c.

Ċuaiḋ sé as an tiġ.	He went out of the house.
Dul as an mbeaṫaiḋ.	To depart from life.

2. With various other verbs:

Dúisiġim as codlaḋ.	I arouse from sleep.
Cuirim as seilḃ.	I dispossess.
Croċaim as.	I hang from.
Cuirim asam.	I utter (a shriek, &c.)
Léigim as.	I let off.
Sgriosaim af.	I erase from.
Tuitim as a ċéile.	To fall asunder.
Tarraing as a ċéile.	To pull asunder.

3. To express **origin, cause; ground of proof; confidence, trust in:**

As gaċ áird.	From every quarter.
Soċar do ḃaint as.	Derive benefit from.
An fáṫ as.	The reason why.
Ar so suas.	Henceforth.
Is follus as.	It is evident from,
Iontuigṫe as.	Inferable from,
Muiniġin as.	Confidence in.

4. After verbs, of **boasting** or **taking pride in:**

Maoiḋim as.	I boast of.
Glórṁar as.	Glorying in.
Lánṁar as féin.	Full of himself.

620.

ĊUN (ċum), TOWARDS.

1. Ċum is used after **verbs of motion:**

Ċuaiḋ sé ċum an tiġe.	He went towards the house.
Cur ċum fairrge.	To put to sea.

2. Before **verbal noun to express purpose:**

Ṫáinig sé ċum an ċapaill do ḋíol.	He came to sell the horse.

3. In Phrases, as :

Taḃairt ċum críċe.	To bring to pass.
Gaḃaim ċugam.	I take for myself.
Cur ċum báis.	To put to death.
Léig ċum báis.	Let die.
Gleusta ċum oibre.	Prepared for work.
Ċum go.	In order that.
Guiḋim ċum.	I pray to.
Dul ċum dliġeaḋ.	To go to law.

621. DE, FROM, OUT OF.

1. **Literal use:**

Bainim de.	I take from.
Éiriġim de.	I arise from.
Tuitim de.	I fall from.
Sgaoilim de.	I loose from (anything).

2. **Partitive use:**

Drong de na daoiniḃ.	Some of the people.
Duine de na fearaiḃ.	One of the men.
Fear de ṁuintir Maṫgaṁna.	One of the O'Mahoney's.

Often before the relative it is equivalent to a **superlative relative**:

Ḃeurfad gaċ níḋ d'á ḃfuil agam.	I will give everything I have.
Is é an fear is aoirde d' á ḃfacas riaṁ.	He is the tallest man I ever saw.
Ní maiṫ leis níḋ d' á dtugais dó.	He does not like anything you gave him.

3. **In the following phrases:**

de ḃriġ, because

d’ eagla go, lest

d’ aois, of age

de ṡíor, perpetually

de ḋruim, owing to

d’ éis, after

de ḋeoin, willingly

de ṡúil le, in expectation of

d’ áiriṫe, for certain

de ġnáṫ, usually

de ġníoṁ, in effect

de m’ iúl, to my knowledge

de ḋíṫ, } for lack of, want of

d’ easbaiḋ, }

d’ aiṁḋeoin, unwillingly, in spite of

de ṫaoiḃ, concerning

4. **After following verbs, &c.:**

Fiafruiġim de.	I ask (enquire) of.
Leanaim de.	I adhere to.
Líonta de (le).	Filled with.
Lán de.	Full of.
Ġním tagairt de.	I mention.
Ġním úsáid de.	I make use of.
Ġním … de…,	I make … out of (from) …
Léigim díom.	I let slip.

5. To translate **"with,"** &c., in phrases like de léim, with a leap, at a bound.

622.

DO, TO, FOR.

1. Literal use :

(*a*) **After adjectives** (generally with is):

cinnte do,	certain for (a person).
cóir do,	right for (a person).
éigean do,	necessary for.
maiṫ do,	good for.
fearr do,	better for.

(*b*) **After nouns:**

(dul) i soċar do,	for the advantage of.
(is) beaṫa ḋó,	(is) his life,
(is) aṫair ḋó,	(is) his father.

(*c*) **After verbs:**

Aiṫnim do, I command.

Bronnaim do (ar) I present to.

Deónuiġim do, I vouchsafe to.

Fógraim do, I announce to.

Freagraim do, I answer.

Géillim do, I obey or do homage to.

Órduiġim do, I order.

Gaḃaim do ċosaiḃ, I trample.

Cinnim do, I appoint for.

Coṁairliġim do, I advise.

Diúltaim do, I renounce.

Fóġnaim do, I am of use to.

Geallaim do, I promise.

Léigim do, I allow, let.}}

Innsin do, I tell.

Taisbeánaim do, } I
Teasbánaim do, } show

Coiglim do, I spare.

2. **To express the agent:**

After the verbal noun, preceded by ar, ag, &c.:

Ar dteaċt annso dóiḃ. On their arrival here.

With the participle of necessity, participles in ion, &c.:

Ní molta ḋuit é. He must not be praised by you.

Is é sin is indéanta ḋuit. That's what you ought to do.

3. For its use in connection with the verbal noun see pars. 563, 568, 570.

623.

FÁ or FÉ, UNDER, ABOUT, CONCERNING.

1. Literal use: as,

Tá sé fá 'n mbord. It is under the table.

2. Fá is used in forming the **multiplicatives:**

a trí fé ḋó, twice three.

a dó fé ceaṫair, four times two.

3. **In adverbial phrases:**

fá ċoṁair, (keeping) for.

fá leiṫ, separately.

fá ḋeo, at last.

fá ḋeireaḋ, at last.

fá ṡeaċ, individually, separately.

fá mar, just so (as),

624.

GAN, WITHOUT.

1. Literal use:

Gan pinginn im ṗóca. Without a penny in my pocket.

2. To express *not* before the verbal noun:

Abair leis gan teaċt. Tell him not to come.

625.

GO, WITH.

1. This preposition used only in a few phrases:

generally before leiṫ, *a half.*

Míle go leiṫ. A mile and a half.

Slat go leiṫ. A yard and a half.

626. GO, TO, TOWARDS.

1. Literal use: motion, as—

Go Luimneaċ. To or towards Limerick.

2. In Phrases:

Ó uair go h-uair.	From hour to hour.
Ó nóin go ċéile.	From evening to evening.
Ó ṁaidin go h-oiḋċe.	From morning till night.

627. I (in, ann), IN, INTO (*Eclipsing*).

1. Of **time:**

Ins an tSaṁraḋ. In Summer.

2. Of **motion to a place:**

Iar dteaċt i n-Éirinn do Ṗádraig.	Patrick having come into Ireland.

3. Of **rest at a place:**

Tá sé i nDoire.	He is in Derry.

4. In **following phrases:**

i n-aoinḟeaċt le, along with,

i n-aġaiḋ, against.

i ndiaiḋ, after.

i gceann, at end of.

i gcoinne, against.

i gcoṁair, in front of.

i ḃfoċair, in company with.

i measg, among.

i dtimċioll, about.

5. After words expressing **esteem, respect, liking, &c.,** for something:

Dúil i n-ór.	Desire for gold.

6. **Used predicatively after** TÁ:

Táim im’ ḟear láidir anois. I am a strong man now.

7. In existence, extant:

Is breáġ an aimsir atá ann. It’s fine weather we’re having.

Ní cóir ḋuit dul amaċ 7 an aimsir ḟuar atá ann anois.
You ought not to go out *considering* the cold weather we have now.

8. Used after tá to express “to be able.”

Ní ḃíonn ann féin iompóḋ. He cannot turn.

9. After cuir, ḃeir, dul, in phrases like:

Cuirim i gcuiṁne do. I remind.

Dul i soċar do. To benefit.

628.

IDIR, BETWEEN, AMONG.

1. Literal use :

nós idir na Rómánċaiḃ,	a custom among the Romans.
deiṫfir eatorra,	difference between them.

2.

IDIR … AGUS, BOTH … AND.

idir ṡaiḋḃir agus ḃoċt,	both rich and poor.
idir aṫair agus ṁac,	both father and son.
idir ċaorċaiḃ agus uanaiḃ,	both sheep and lambs,
idir ḟearaiḃ is ṁnáiḃ,	both men and women.

629.

LE, WITH.

1. Literal use, with:

leis an maor,	with the steward.

2. **With is to denote possession:**

Is liomsa é.	It is my own. It belongs to me.
Cia leis iad?	Who owns them?

3. With is and adjectives to denote "*in the opinion of*:"

Is fiú liom é.	I think it worth my while.
Do b' ḟada leis.	He thought it long.

4. To denote **instrument or means:**

Briseaḋ an ḟuinneóg le cloiċ.	The window was broken by a stone.
Fuair sé bás leif an ocras.	He died of hunger.
Losgaḋ le teiniḋ é.	He was burned with fire.

5. After verbs or expressions of **motion:**

Amaċ leis,	Out (he went).
Siar liḃ!	Stand back!
D' imṫiġ sí léiṫi,	She departed.

6. With verbs of **touching; behaviour towards; saying to; listening to; selling to; paying to; waiting for:**

Éist liom,	Listen to me.
Bainim le,	I touch.
Labraim le,	I speak to.
Díolas an bó leis,	I sold the cow to him.
Ná fan liom,	Do not wait for me.

7. After words expressing **comparison with, likeness to, severance from, union with, peace with, war with, expectation of.**

Tá sé chomh árd liom.	He is as tall as I.
Tá sé cosmhail leat.	He is like you.
Do sgar sé leo.	He separated from them.

8. **With verbal noun to express purpose, intention** (see pars. 567, 569).

9. In following phrases:—

le h-aġaiḋ, for (use of),
le h-uċt, with a view to.
le h-ais, beside.
le fánaiḋ, downward.
le cois, near, beside.
láiṁ le, near.
mar aon le, along with
taoḃ le, beside.

630.

MAR, LIKE TO, AS.

1. Literal use: *as, like to.*

mar sin, thus
agus mar sin de, and so on.
Do ġlac sé mar ċéile í. He took her for a spouse.
fá mar aduḃairt sé, (according) as he said.

2. Before relative particle a, it is equivalent to *as, how, where,* &c.

an áit mar a raiḃ sé, the place where he was.

3. For an idiomatic use of mar, see par. 353.[W 1]

631.

Ó, FROM, SINCE.

1. Since (of time): as,

ó ṫús, from the beginning. ó ṡoin, ago.

Conjunction: as,

Ó nać ḃfacas rud ar biṫ, ṫángas aḃaile arís.
Since I saw nothing I came home again.

2. Of place, motion from:

Ó Éirinn, from Erin.

3. In a modal sense:

ód ċroiḋe, with all thy heart.

boċt ó (i) f spioraid, poor in spirit

4. After words expressing **severance from, distance from, going away from, turning from, taking from, exclusion from, cleansing, defending, protecting, healing, alleviating.**

632.

ÓS, OVER.

Used only in a few phrases as:

ós cionn, above, over.

bun ós cionn, upside down.

ós ísiol, silently, secretly.

ós ard loudly.

633.

ROIṀ, BEFORE.

1. Of **time:**

Deiċ nóimid roiṁ (ċun) a trí. Ten minutes to three.

Roiṁe seo. Before this, heretofore, formerly.

Roiṁe sin. Previously.

2. Of fleeing before, from; coming in front of; lying before one (= awaiting); putting before one (= proposing to oneself):

Cibé ċuireas roiṁe é seo do ḋeunaṁ. Whoever proposes to do this.

Ḃí an girrfiaḋ ag riṫ roiṁ na conaiḃ. The hare was running from the hounds.

3. After **expressions of fear, dislike, welcome, &c.:**

Ná bíoḋ eagla ort rómpa.	Do not be afraid of them.
Fáilte róṁat (róṁaiḃ)!	Welcome!

634.

TAR, BEYOND, OVER, PAST.

1. Of **motion** (place and time):

Léim sé ṫar an mballa.	He leaped over the wall.
An ṁí seo ġaḃ ṫorainn.	Last month.

2. **Figuratively:** “in preference to,” “beyond.”

Ṫar mar ḃí sé deiċ mbliaḋna fiċead ó ṡoin.	Compared with what it was 30 years ago.
Ṫar mar buḋ ḋliġṫeaċ ḋó.	Beyond what was lawful for him.

3. In following phrases :

dul tar, transgress.

teaċt ṫar, refer to, treat of

tar éis, after.

ṫar ais, back.

Tar ċeann go, notwithstanding.

635.

TRÉ, (TRÍ), THROUGH, BY MEANS OF.

1. Physically, through:

Tré n-a láṁaiḃ. Through his hands.

2. Figuratively, “owing to”:

Tríd sin. Owing to that.

N.B. — In the spoken language tríd is generally used instead of tré or treas.

636.

UM, ABOUT, AROUND.

1. **Time:** um ṫráṫnóna, in the evening.

2. **Place:** um an tiġ, around the house.

3. **About:** of putting or having clothing on.

Do ċuireadar umpa a gcuid éadaiġ.	They put on their clothes.

4. **Cause:** uime sin, therefore.

1. ↑ ar a ḟaid, literally *on its length*.
2. ↑ Cuirim may be used in this sense.

Cite error: `<ref>` tags exist for a group named "W", but no corresponding `<references group="W"/>` tag was found

---

Notes

Cite error: `<ref>` tags exist for a group named "W", but no corresponding `<references group="W"/>` tag was found

Notes (Wikisource)

Cite error: `<ref>` tags exist for a group named "W", but no corresponding `<references group="W"/>` tag was found

PARSING.

637. **A.** Parse each word in the following sentence:

Adeir Seumas gur leis féin an capall do bhí aige

(Prep. Grade, 1900).

Adeir	An irreg. trans. verb, indic. mood, present tense, analytic form of the verb deirim (verbal noun, rádi).
Seumas	A proper noun, first declen., genitive Seumais, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen., nom. case, being subject of adeir.
gur	A conjunction used before the past tense: compounded of go and ro.
[’b]	The dependent form, past tense, of the verb is
leis	A prepositional pronoun (or a pronominal preposition), 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender. Compounded of le and sé.
féin	An indeclinable noun, added to leis for the sake of emphasis.
an	The definite article, nom. sing, masc, qualifying the noun capall.
capall	A com. noun, first declen., genitive capaill, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend. and nom. case, being the subject of the suppressed verb [’b].

do	A particle used as a sign of the past tense, causing aspiration ; but here it has also the force of a relative.
ḃí	An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood past tense, analytic form of the verb táim (verbal noun, ḃeiṫ).
aige	A prepositional pronoun, 3rd sing., masc. gender, compounded of ag and é.

B. Parse the following sentence: Do ċuir sí fód móna ar dearg-lasaḋ i n-díon tiġe na scoile maidin lae bealtaine. (Junior Grade, 1900).

Do — A particle used as the sign of the past tense, causing aspiration.

ċuir — A reg. trans. verb, indic. mood, past tense, analytic form of the verb cuirim (verbal noun, cur).

sí — A personal pronoun, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gend., conjunctive form, nominative case, being the subject of the verb cuip.

fód — A com. noun, first declen., gen. fóid 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender, accusative case, being the object of the verb ċuir.

móna	A common noun, third declension, nom. móin, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gender, and genitive case, governed by the noun fód.
ar	A preposition, governing the dative.
dearg-lasad	A compound verbal noun, genitive dearg-lasta, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition ar.
i	A preposition, governing the dative case, and causing eclipsis.
díon	A com. noun, first declens., gen. dín, 3rd pers. sing. masc. gender and dative case, governed by preposition i. (N.B. — This word may also be second declension).
tiġe	An irreg. com. noun, nom. teaċ, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend., genitive case, governed by the noun díon.
na	The definite article, genitive sing. feminine, qualifying scoile.
scoile	A common noun, second declension, nom.

scoil, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gend. and genitive case, governed by the noun tiġe.

maidin	A com. noun, second declension, gen. maidne, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gend. and dative case, governed by the preposition ar (understood).
lae-bealtaine	A compound proper noun, nom. lá bealtaine, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend. and genitive case, governed by the noun maidin.

C. Parse: Táim ag dul ċum an aonaiġ (Junior, ’98).

Táim	An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood, present tense, 1st pers. sing., synthetic form, of tá (verbal noun, ḃeiṫ).
ag	A prep., governing the dative case.
dul	A verbal noun, 3rd pers. sing., dative ease, governed by the preposition ag.
ċum	A noun (dative case, governed by do understood) used as a preposition, governing the genitive case.
an	The definite article, gen. sing, masc., qualifying the noun aonaiġ.
aonaiġ	A common noun, first declen., nom, aonaċ, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender, and genitive case governed by ċum.

D. Parse: Ní ċóir ḋuic é do ḃualaḋ.

Ní	A negative adverb, causing aspiration, modifying the suppressed verb is.
[is]	The assertive verb, present tense, absolute form.
cóir	A common adjective, positive degree, comparative córa, qualifying the phrase é do ḃualaḋ.
ḋuit	A prep. pronoun, 2nd pers. sing, compound of do and tú.
é	A personal pronoun, 3rd pers. sing., nom. case, disjunctive form, being the subject of the suppressed verb is.
do	A preposition, causing aspiration, and governing the dative case.
ḃualaḋ.	A verbal noun, genitive buailte, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition do.

N.B.—É do ḃualaḋ is the subject of the sentence.

E. Parse: Ṫáinig sé le capall a ċeannaċ.

Ṫáinig — An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood, past tense, 3rd pers. sing. of the verb tigim (verbal noun, teaċt).

sé — A pers. pron, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen., conjunctive form, nom. case, being the subject of ṫáinig.

le — A preposition governing the dative case.

capall — A common noun, first declens. gen. capaill, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend. and dative case governed by le.

a — The softened form of the preposition do, which causes aspiration, and governs the dative case.

ċeannaċ. — A verbal noun, genitive ceannuiġṫe, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition a.

IDIOMS.

TÁ … AGAM, I HAVE.

638. As already stated there is no verb "*to have*" in Irish. Its place is supplied by the verb tá followed by the preposition ag. **The direct object of the verb "to have" in English becomes the subject of the verb** tá **in Irish:** as, I have a book. Tá leabar agam. The literal translation of the Irish phrase is "*a book is at me.*"

This translation appears peculiar at first sight, but it is a mode of expression to be found in other languages. Most students are familiar with the Latin phrase "*Est mihi pater.*" I have a father (lit. there is a father to me); and the French phrase *Ce livre est à moi.* I own this book (lit. This book is to me).

We give here a few sentences to exemplify the idiom: —

He has the book.	Tá an leaḃar aige.
I have not it.	Ní ḟuil sé agam.
Have you my pen ?	An ḃfuil mo ṗeann agat?
The woman had the cow.	Ḃí an ḃó ag an mnaoi.
The man had not the horse.	Ní raiḃ an capall ag an ḃfear.
Will you have a knife tomorrow?	An mbéiḋ sgian agat i mbáraċ?
He would not have the dog.	Ní ḃiaḋ an madra aige.
We used to have ten horses.	Do ḃíoḋ deiċ gcapall againn.

IS LIOM, I OWN.

639. As the verb "*have*" is translated by tá and the preposition ag, so in a similar manner the verb "*own*" is translated by the verb IS and the preposition LE. Not only is the verb "*to own,*" but also all expressions conveying the

idea of *ownership*, such as: The book belongs to me: the book is mine, &c.; are translated by the same idiom.

I own the book. The book is mine. The book belongs to me.	Is liom an leaḃar.
The horse was John's. The horse belonged to John. John owned the horse.	Ba le Seaġán an capall.

Notice the position of the words. In translating the verb "*have*" the verb tá is separated from the preposition ag by the noun or pronoun; but in the case of "own" the verb is and the preposition le come together. (See par. 589, &c.)

I have the book.	Tá an leaḃar agam.
I own the book.	Is liom an leaḃar.

In translating such a phrase as "*I have only two cows*," the noun generally comes after the preposition ag: so that this is an exception to what has been said above.

I have only two cows. Ní ḟuil agam aċt dá ḃuin.

I KNOW.

640. There is no verb or phrase in Irish which can cover the various shades of meaning of the English verb "*to know*." First, we have the very commonly used word feadar (or feadar mé), *I know;* but this verb is used only after negative or interrogative particles, and has only a few forms. Again, we have the verb aiṫniġim, *I know;* but this verb can only be used in the sense of *recognising.* Finally we have the three very commonly used phrases, tá eolas agam, tá aiṫne agam, and tá a ḟios agam, all meaning "*I know;*" but these three expressions have three different meanings which must be carefully distinguished.

Whenever the English verb "*know*" means "*to know by heart*" or "*to know the character of a person,*" "*to know by study,*" &c., use the phrase tá eolas ag … ar.

Whenever "*know*" means "*to recognise,*" "*to know by*

appearance," "*to know by sight*," &c., use the phrase tá aiṫne ag … ar. This phrase is usually restricted to *persons*.

When "*know*" means "*to know by mere information*," "*to happen to know*," as in such a sentence as "*Do you know did John come in yet?*" use the phrase tá a ḟios ag, *e.g.* Ḃfuil a ḟios agat an dtáinig Seaġán isteaċ fós?

As a rule young students experience great difficulty in selecting the phrases to be used in a given case. This difficulty arises entirely from not striving to grasp the real meaning of the English verb. For those who have already learned French it may be useful to state that as a general rule tá eolas agam corresponds to *je sais* and tá aiṫne agam to *je connais*.

Tá aiṫne agam air aċt ní ḟuil eolas agam air. *Je le connais mais je ne le sais pas.* I know him by sight but I do not know his character. "*Do you know that man going down the road?*" Here the verb "*know*" simply means recognise, therefore the Irish is: ḃfuil aiṫne agat ar an ḃfear soin atá ag dul síos an

bóṫar? If you say to a fellow- student "*Do you know your lessons to-day?*" You mean "Do you know them by rote?" or "Have you studied them?" Hence the Irish would be: "Ḃfuil eolas agat ar do ċeaċtannaiḃ indiu?"

Notice also the following translations of the verb *know*.

is maiṫ is eol dom,	'Tis well I know.
is fiosaċ (feasaċ) ḋom,	I know,
deirim an rud atá ar eolas agam,	I say what I know.

I LIKE, I PREFER.

641. "*I like*" and "*I prefer*" are translated by the expressions Is maiṫ (áil, ait) liom and Is fear liom (it is good with me; and, it is better with me).

I like milk.	Is maiṫ liom bainne.
He prefers milk to wine.	Is fearr leis bainne ná fíon.
Does the man like meat?	An maiṫ leis an ḃfear feoil?
Did you like that ?	Ar ṁaiṫ leat é sin?
I liked it.	Ba ṁaiṫ liom é.
We did not like the water.	Níor ṁaiṫ linn an t-uisge.

642. If we change the preposition "le" in the above sentences, for the preposition "do," we get another idiom. "It is really good for," "It is of benefit to." Is maiṫ dom é. It is good for me; (*whether I like it or not*).

He does not like milk but it is good for him.
Ní maiṫ leis bainne aċt is maiṫ dó é.

N.B.—In these and like idiomatic expressions the preposition "le" conveys the person's own ideas and feelings, whether these are in accordance with fact or not. Is fiú liom dul go h-Albain. I think it is worth

my while to go to Scotland (*whether it is really the case or not*). Is mór liom an luaċ soin. I think that a great price. Is suaraċ liom é sin. I think that trifling (*another person may not*).

The word "think" in such phrases is not translated into Irish.

Is fiú ḋuit dul go h-Albain. It is really worth your while to go to Scotland (*whether you think so or not*).

TIG LIOM, I CAN, I AM ABLE.

643. Although there is a regular verb feudaim, meaning *I can, I am able*, it is not always used. The two other expressions often used to translate the English verb "I can," are tig liom and is féidir liom.

The following examples will illustrate the uses of the verbs.

Present Tense.

feudaim, tig liom[1] or is féidir liom,[2]	I can, or am able.
feurdann tú, tig leat or is féidir leat.	Thou canst or art able,
&c., &c.	

Negative.

Ní ḟeudaim, ní ṫig Uliom; or ní féidir liom.	I cannot, I am not able.

Interrogative.

An dtig leat? or an féidir leat?	Can you? or are you able?

Negative Interrogative.

Naċ dtig leis? or naċ féidir leis?	Can he not? or is he not able?

Past Tense.

D’ ḟeudas, ṫáinig liom, or	I could, or was able.

do b’ fhéidir liom.

Imperfect.

D’ fheudainn, thigeadh liom. I used to be able.

Future.

Feudfad, tiocfaidh liom. I shall be able.

Conditional.

D’ fheudfainn, do thiocfadh liom. } I would be able,

Ní féidir leis, (He thinks) he cannot,

Ní féidir dhó, He cannot (It is absolutely impossible for him).

I MUST.

644. The verb “*must*” when it means **necessity or duty**, is usually translated by the phrase ní fuláir or caithfidh. This latter is really the third person singular, future tense of caithim; but the present and other tenses are also frequently used. It may also be very neatly rendered by the phrase, is éigean do (lit. *it is necessary for*).

Ní fuláir ḋom, caiṫfiḋ mé, or
is éigean dom. } I must.

Ní fuláir ḋuit, caiṫfiḋ tú, or
is éigean duit. } You must.

Ní fuláir ḋó, caiṫfiḋ sé, or
is éigean dó. } He must.

&c., &c.

The English phrase "**have to**" usually means "*must*" and is translated like the above: as, *I have to go home now*. Caiṫfiḋ mé dul a ḃaile anois.

The English verb "*must,*" expressing duty or necessity, has no past tense of its own. The English past tense of it would be "*had to;*" as, "*I had to go away then.*" The Irish translation is as follows:—

Níor ḃ'ḟuláir ḋom, Ċaiṫ mé,
or
do b'éigean dom. } I had to.

Níor ḃ'ḟuláir ḋuit, Ċaiṫ tú or
do b'éigean duit. } You had to.

&c., &c.

The English verb "*must*" may also express a supposition; as in the phrase "*You must be tired.*" The simplest translation of this is "Ní fuláir go ḃfuil tuirse ort," or, "Ní fuláir nó tá tuirse ort." The phrase "is cosaṁail go," meaning "*It is probable that*" may also be used : as, Is cosaṁail go ḃfuil tuirse ort.

The English phrase "*must have*" always expresses supposition, and is best translated by the above phrase followed by a verb in the past tense, as, "*You must have been hungry,*" Ní fuláir go raiḃ ocras ort. He must have gone out, Ní fuláir go ndeaċaiḋ sé amaċ.

Ní fuláir gur ċuaiḋ (or go ndeaġaiḋ) sé amaċ, is used in Munster.

I ESTEEM.

645. *I esteem* is translated by the phrase Tá meas agam ar. Literally, "*I have esteem on.*"

I esteem John.	Tá meas agam ar Ṡeáġán.
Did you esteem him?	Raiḃ meas agat air?
He says that he greatly esteems you.	Deir sé go ḃfuil meas mór aige ortsa.

I DIE.

646. Although there is a regular verb, eug, *die*, in Irish it is not often used; the phrase ġeiḃim bás, *I find death*, is usually employed now. The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

The old man died yesterday.	Fuair an sean-ḟear bás indé.
We all die.	Ġeiḃmid uile bás.
I shall die.	Ġeóḃad bás.
They have just died.	Táid tar éis báis d'ḟaġáil.
You must die.	Caiṫfiḋ tú bás d'ḟaġáil.

I OWE.

647. There is no verb "*owe*" in Irish. Its place is supplied by saying "*There is a debt on a person*."

Tá fiaċ[3]orm. *I owe.*

Whenever the amount of the debt is expressed the word Fiaċ is usually omitted and the sum substituted.

He owes a pound.	Tá pu̇nt air.
You owe a shilling.	Tá sgilling ort.

When the person to whom the money is due is mentioned, the construction is a little more difficult: as, *I owe you a pound* as, Tá púnt agat orm, i.e., You have (*the claim of*) a pound on me—the words in brackets being always omitted.

He owes me a crown.	Tá coróin agam air.
Here is the man to whom you owe the money.	Seo é an fear a (go) ḃfuil an t-airgead aige ort.

I MEET.

648. The verb "*meet*" is usually translated by the phrase "*there is turned on*," e.g., "*I meet a man*" is translated by saying "*A man is turned on me.*" Castar fear orm

(liom or ḋom); but the phrase buailtear (or ṫarla) fear orm is also used. *I met the woman,* do casaḋ an ḃean orm (liom or ḋom).

They met two men on the road.	Do casaḋ beirt ḟear orṫa ar an mbóṫar.
I met John.	Ḃuail Seaġán umam.

Physical Sensations.

649. All physical sensations, such as hunger, thirsty weariness, pain, &c., are translated into Irish by saying that "*hunger, thirst,* &c., *is on a person;*" as, I am hungry. Tá ocras orm. Literally, *hunger is on me*. He is thirsty. Tá tart air. Literally, *thirst is on him*.

The same idiom is used for emotions, such as **pride, joy, sorrow, shame,** &c. The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

Ḃfuil ocras ort?	Are you hungry?
Ní ḟuil ocras orm anois.	I am not hungry now.
Ḃí an-tart orainn indé.	We were very thirsty yesterday.
Ḃí ana ṫart orainn indé.	
Ḃfuil náire orṫa?	Are they ashamed?
Ḃí náire an tsaoġail uiṙti.	She was very much ashamed.
Béiḋ bród mór air.	He will be very proud.
Raiḃ tuirse ort?	Were you tired?
Ná bíoḋ eagla ort.	Don't be afraid.
Tá ana ċodlaḋ orm.	I am very sleepy.
Tá slaġdán ort.	You have a cold.

Whenever there is a simple adjective in Irish corresponding to the English adjective of *mental* or *physical sensation*, we have a choice of two constructions, as:—

I am cold.	Tá mé fuar	or	tá fuaċt[4] orm.
You are sick.	Tá tú tinn (or breoite)	”	tá tinneas ort.
I was weary.	Ḃí mé tuirseaċ	„	ḃí tuirse orm.

Tá mé tinn and tá tinneas orm have not quite the same meaning, Tá mé tinn means *I feel sick*; but tá tinneas orm means *I am in some sickness, such as fever,* &c.

I CANNOT HELP.

650. The English phrase “I cannot help that,” is translated by saying *I have no help on that.* Ní ḟuil neart agam air sin. The word leiġeas, “*cure*,” may be used instead of neart.

When “*cannot help*” is followed by a present participle in English, use Ní { ḟéadaim / féidir liom } gan, with verbal

noun: as, *I cannot help laughing*, Ní { ḟéadaim / féidir liom } gan gáiriḋe.

I AM ALONE.

651. There are two expressions which translate the English word “alone” in such sentences as I am alone, He is alone, &c, *i.e.*, Táim im aonar, or Táim liom féin (I am in my oneship, or I am by (with) myself). He is alone. Tá sé na aonar, or Tá sé leis féin. She was alone. Ḃí sí ’na h-aonar, or Ḃí sí léiṫi féin. We shall be alone. Béimid ’nár n-aonar, or béimid linn féin.

I ASK.

652. The English word “*ask*” has two distinct meanings according as it means “*beseech*” or “*inquire.*” In Irish there are two distinct verbs, viz., Iarraim, I ask (*for a favour*), and Fiafruiġim, I ask (*for information*). Before translating the word “*ask*” we must always determine what is its real meaning, and then use iarr or fiafruiġ accordingly.

Ask your friend for money.	Iarr airgead ar do ċaraid.
Ask God for those graces.	Iarr air Ḋia na grásta soin a ṫaḃairt duit.
Ask him what o'clock it is.	Fiafruiġ de cad a ċlog é.
He asked us who was that at the door.	D' ḟiafruiġ sé ḋínn cia'r ḃ'é sin ag an doras.
They asked me a question.	D'ḟiafruiġeadar ceist díom.

653. I DO NOT CARE.

I do not care.	Is cuma liom.
It is no affair of mine.	Is cuma ḋom.
Is it not equal to you?	Nać cuma ḋuit?
It is no affair of yours.	Is cuma ḋuit.
You don't care.	Is cuma leat.
He does not care.	Is cuma leis.
It is no affair of his.	Is cuma ḋó.
We did not care.	Ba ċuma linn.
It was no affair of ours.	Ba ċuma ḋúinn.
They did not care.	Ba ċuma leo.

(See what has been said about the prepositions le and do in the Idiom “I prefer,” par. 642.)

I OUGHT.

654. “*I ought*” is translated by the phrase is cóir (or ceart) dom. You ought, is cóir ḋuit, is ceart duit. We ought to go home, Is cóir ḋúinn dul a ḃaile. We ought to have gone home, Ba ċóir ḋúinn dul a ḃaile. As the word “*ought*” has no inflection for

the past tense in English, it is necessary to use the *past infinitive in English* to express past time. But as the Irish expression, is cóir, has a past tense (ba ċóir) the *simple verbal noun* is always used in Irish in such expressions.

Ought you not have gone to Derry with them?	Nár ċóir ḋuit dul go Doire leo?
He ought not have gone away.	Níor ċóir ḋó imṫeaċt.

English Dependent Phrases translated by the Verbal Noun.

655. Instead of the usual construction, consisting of a verb in a finite tense followed by its subject (a noun or a pronoun), we very frequently meet in Irish with the following construction. The English finite verb is translated by the Irish verbal noun, and the English subject is placed before the verbal noun. If the subject be a noun it is in the nominative *form*, but if a pronoun in the disjunctive *form*.

The following examples will exemplify the idiom:—

I'd prefer that he should be there rather than myself.

Do b'fearr liom é do bheit ann ná mise.

Is it not better for us that these should not be in the boat.

Nach fearr dúinn gan iad so do bheit insan mbád.

I saw John when he was coming home.

Chonnaic mé Seaghán agus é ag teacht a bhaile.

I knew him *when I was a boy*.

Bhí aithne agam air agus mé im bhuachaill.

The clock struck *just as he was coming in*.

Do bhuail, an clog agus é ag teacht isteach.

1. ↑ Literally: It comes with me.
2. ↑ It is possible with me.
3. ↑ The plural of this word, Fiacha, is very frequently used in this phrase.
4. ↑ Distinguish between slaghdán a cold (a disease) and fuacht, the cold, coldness (of the weather) and the

adjective fuar, cold.

Notes

Idiomatic Expressions.

CUIR.

Cuir ormsa é.	*Say* it was I did it.
Cuirimse ortsa é.	I *say* it was you did it.
Cuir umat (ort).	*Dress* yourself.
Ċuir an tart go mór air.	Thirst *annoyed* him greatly.
Cuirfeadsa d'ḟiaċaiḃ ort stad.	I'll *make* you stop.
Cuir iaċall air é (a) ḋéanaṁ.	*Make* him do it.
Ná cuir orm 7 ní ċuirfead ort.	Don't *interfere* with me and I will not interfere with you.
Ċuir sé a rian.	He *tracked* him (her, them).
Ċuir sé stró orm. Ċuir sé speic (or furán) orm.	He *addressed* me.
Ċuireas róṁam a ḋéanaṁ.	I *resolved* to do it.
Tá cur síos (tráċt *or* iomráḋ) ar an	There is *talk* about the war.

gcogaḋ.

Ċuir sé culaiḋ éadaiġ dá ḋéanaṁ.	He *got* a suit of clothes made.
Ċuir sé ’na luiġe orm.	He *convinced* me of it.
Cuir i gcás gur saiġdiúr mise.	*Suppose* me to be a soldier.
Cuir ar bun.	Established.
Ċuir (ḃain) sé faoi i gCorcaiġ.	He *settled down* in Cork.
Tá sé ag cup ’s ag cúiteaṁ.	He is *debating in his mind*.

TAḂAIR.

Taḃair suas.	Surrender.
Tá sé taḃartha. Tá sé buailte suas.	He is played out.
Tá sé tugṫa (taḃarṫa) do'n loċt san.	He is *addicted* to that vice.
Taḃair do ḋruim leis.	*Turn* your back to him.
Ṫugas fé ndeár(a) an solas.	I *noticed* the light.
Tá sé taḃarṫa suas.	He has been given up for dead.
Ṫug sé suas.	He gave *in*.
Tá taḃarṫa suas aire.	He *has given in*.
Is deacair fírinne 7 éiṫeaċ do ṫaḃairt d'á ċéile.	It is hard to *reconcile* truth and falsehood.
Tá taḃairt suas mór air.	He is *highly educated*.

DÉAN.

Déan rud ar do ṁáṫair.	*Obey* your mother.
Ní ḋéanfaḋ sé rud orm.	He would not *oblige* me.
Naċ maiṫ naċ ndeárnais féin é!	*How well* you didn't do it yourself!
Naċ maiṫ ná déanann tú féin rud ar do ṁáṫair?	Why don't you obey your mother yourself?
Nuair ṫuigeadar a ḟeaḃas do ḋinis (rinnis) an ḃeart.	When they understood *how well* you had done the trick.
Déan aire (do) ṫaḃairt dod ġnó féin.	*Mind* your own business.
Déan do ġnó féin.	
Taḃair aire dod ġnó féin.	
Déan na ba do ċruḋ (ḃleaġan).	Milk the cows.
An ndeárnais an dorus	Did you shut the door?

do ḋúnaḋ?

Tá sé ag déanaṁ orainn. He is coming towards us.

IMṪIĠ.

Conus (cionnus) d' imṫiġ leis? How did he *get on*?

Cad d' imṫiġ air? { What *became* of him ? / What *happened* to him ?

Nuaip ṫuiteann rud mar seo amaċ. When something like this *happens*.

Cad imṫeoċas orm? (Creud éireoċas dom?) } What *will become* of me ?

NÁ.

Dob’ é an ċéad duine do ḃuail uime NÁ Seaġán liaṫ.

The first person he met was Seaġán liaṫ.

Is é rud dob’ ḟearr leis a ḟeiscint NÁ na Sasanaiġ go léir d’á ndíbirt as Éirinn.

What he wished most to see was the banishment of the whole of the English from Ireland.

Is é rud do ṫug anois ċum cainte leat mé NÁ mé ḃeiṫ i gcruaḋ-ċás.

What brought me to talk with you now is the fact that I am in difficulty.

Is é rud do rinne (ḋein) an fear NÁ caiṫeaṁ leo.

What the man did was to throw at them.

Is é rud do ḋein Séamas annsain NÁ í ḃronnaḋ air.

What James did then was to make him a present of it.

Is é rud adeireaḋ gaċ

What everyone used to

éinne NÁ gur ṁaiṫ air.

say was that it was a great blessing for him.

MÓR.

Is mór le rádh é. It is *important*.

Is mór le maoidheamh é. It is a thing to be proud of, *or* boast about.

Níor mhór le rádh é. It was not of much importance.

Ní mór dom filleadh. I *must* return.

Ní mór dom gluaiseacht. I must take my departure.

Ní mór linn duit. We have no objection to your doing so.

Ní mór liom dó é. I don't *grudge* it to him.

Ní mór nach (ná go) bhfuil sé déanta. It is *almost* done.

Ní mór ná go mbeidh sé críochnuighte. It will be nearly finished.

Cá mór dom, &c.? *Why shouldn't I*, &c.? lit., how is it too much for me?

Nach mór a d' éirigh tú! How grand you have got!

Ní móide (mó + de) go raġad. It is not *likely* that I shall go.

BEAG.

Is beag liom é. I *consider* it too small.

Is beag orm é. I don't like it at all.

Is beag agam é. I have no great opinion of him.

Is beag an sgéal é. It's no great harm. He is not to be pitied.

Is beag an ċaḃair ṫú. You are not of much use.

Is beág dá ḟiós agat. 'Tis little you know.

Is beag naċ miṫid dó ḃeiṫ ag imṫeaċt. It is *nearly time for* him to be going.

Ba ḃeag nár ṁiṫid dó ḃeiṫ ag imṫeaċt. It was nearly time for him to be going.

Is beag a ḃríġ é. It is a trifle.

Is beag má tá éinne i n-Éirinn d' ḟéadfaḋ é ḋéanaṁ. *There is hardly* a person in Ireland who could do it.

Miscellaneous.

An éireoċaiḋ (sé) linn?	Shall we *succeed*?
Ḃí sé ag éirġe fuar.	It was *getting* cold.
Maiṫ an áit go raḃais!	Well said! *or* Well done!
Maiṫ mar ṫárla.	It has happened luckily.
Níor laḃair sé fiú aon ḟocal aṁáin.	He did not speak a *single* word.
Gan fiú na n-anála do ṫarraing (ṫarac).	Without *even* taking breath.
Fiú ár ndaoine féin.	*Even* our own people.
Tá sé ag dul i ḃfeaḃas.	He is *getting better*.
Tá sé ag dul i n-olcas.	He is *getting worse*.
Abair é!	Hear! hear! Bravo!
Ní cuiṁin liom a leiṫéid.	I don’t remember *the like of it*.

Ó ṫárla an leaḃar agam anois. — As I *happen to have* the book now.

Tá sé geall le ḃeiṫ follaṁ
Tá sé follaṁ naċ mór. — It is *almost* empty.

Ní ḟuil dul uaiḋ agat. — You cannot *avoid* it.

Tá an fear san ag dul i mbeo orm. — That man's conduct *cuts me to the quick*.

Tá sé i rioċt báis.
Tá sé le h-uċt báis.) — He is at *the point of death*.

Is millte(aċ) an sgéal é. — It is a terrible affair.

Is caillte an lá é le fliċe. — It is a terribly wet day.

Sgéal gan daṫ. — A very *unlikely* story.

Don't annoy me with your

Leig (leog) dom féin led' ċuid cainte.	talk.
Cad é an ċuid atá agatsa ḋe?	What right (call) have you to it?
An ċuid is luġa ḋe ḋá uair sa mbliaḋain.	At least *twice a year*.
Corp na h-éagcóra.	The *essence* of wrong.
le corp díoṁaoinis.	Through *downright* laziness.
Tá fmuc de'n ċeart aige.	He is *partly* right.
Is leaṁ an gnó ḋuit é.	'Tis an absurd thing for you to do.
Cad 'na ṫaoḃ ná ceannuiġeann tú bróga ḋuit féin? Gan an t-airgead do ḃeiṫ agam.	Why don't you buy boots for yourself? *Because* I have not the money.

Tá sé ar nós cuma liom.	He is *indifferent*.
Cé tá ar ár dtí?	Who is *intending us harm*?
Tá sé ar do ṫí.	He is bent on attacking you. He intends to harm you.
Daoine náċ mé.	Others *besides* myself.
Ḃí cead saor aige ar ḋul.	He had *permission to* go.
Is dual aṫar dó.	He has it from his father.
Ḃí mo ṫuras i n-aisdear.	My journey was *in vain*.
Ċa leigeann tú a leas.	You need not.
Gogaille gó.	A fool's errand; a wild goose chase.
Beiḋ san ’na ṁasla ⁊ ’na ġuṫ ar a gclú an dá lá ’s an ḟaid a ḃeiḋ grian sa spéir.	That will be a reproach and a blot on their fame the *longest day* the sun will be in the sky.

Tá sé beagán fuar.	It is a little cold.
Tá sé roinnt boḋar.	He is *somewhat* deaf.
Tá sé gan ḃeiṫ ar ḟóġnaṁ,	He is a *little unwell*.
Ní ḟuil an t-uḃall so aibid i gceart.	This apple is not *quite* ripe.
Ní cúrsaiḋe gáiriḋe é.	It is nothing to laugh at.
Do ġáirfá, mura mbeaḋ naċ cúis ġáiriḋe é.	You would laugh only that it is not a matter to laugh at.
Ní cúrsaiḋe cainte é.	It is nothing to talk about.
Tarraing ċuġat rud éigint eile mar cúrsaiḋe magaiḋ.	Find something else to make fun about.
Cad é an gnó atá agat de?	What do you want it for?
Do baineaḋ iarraċt de ġeit as.	He was *slightly* startled.

Ní ḟuil aon ġar ag dréim leis an mballa. — There's no use trying to get up on the wall.

Ní raibh aon ṁaiṫeas 'na ġlór. — *In vain* did he cry (talk, speak).

Ní móide gur sgríoḃ sé an litir. — *Perhaps* he did *not* write the letter.

Gaḃaim lem' ais sin do ḋéanaṁ. — I *propose* to do that.

Tá buiḋeaċas agam ort (fé)
Táim buiḋeaċ ḋíot (fé.) — I am *thankful* to you (*for*).

Ḃeirim buiḋeaċas duit mar ġeall (ġioll) air. — I *thank* you *for* it.

Gaḃaim buiḋeaċas

leat mar ġeall air.

Beiḋ tú déanach (déiḋeanaċ) ag an traen. — You will be late *for* the train.

Beiḋ tú déanaċ ar sgoil. — You will be late *for* school.

Ḃí cuid aca ġá ráḋ go raiḃ beiṫe (beṙta) ar an mbiṫeaṁnaċ. — Some of them were saying that the rascal was caught.

Éireoċaiḋ a ċroiḋe ar Ḋiarmuid. — It will *break* Dermot's heart.

Sgairt siad ar ġáiriḋiḃ. — They burst out *laughing*.

Munab ort atá an ċaint! — What talk you have! If it isn't you have the talk.

Luiġ an ċaint go léir ar an matalong a — The whole conversation *turned* on the misfortune which *had befallen* Sive.

Ḃí imṫigṫe ar ṡaḋḃ.

Níor imṫiġ orṫa aċt an rud a ḃí tuillte aca. They only got what they *had deserved*.

Ṫeip orainn teaċt suas leo. We failed to overtake them.

Tá sé ag déanaṁ aiṫris ar a ċaint. He is *mimicking* his manner of talking.

Tá sé ar an ḃfear is saiḋbre sa Ṁuṁain. He is the *richest man* in Munster.

Is dóċa gur dóiċ leo. Probably they *imagine*.

Tá sé buailte isteaċ im aigne. I am *firmly convinced*.

Loisgeaḋ iad ’na mbeaṫaiḋ. They were burnt *alive*.

Cad adéanfad ċor ar biṫ aige? What will I do at all *with him*?

Ḃí breis ṁór ⁊ a They were getting a great

gceart aca dá faġáil. deal *more than* their right.

Ḃí coróin fé'n bpúnt aca dá ḟaġáil. They were getting five shillings *in the pound*.

Ḃí gaċ uile ḋuine ag déanaṁ truaiġ (truaġa) di. Everyone was *sympathising* with her.

Coṁnaois do Ṡeaġán an té ba ṡine aca. The eldest of them was the same age as John.

Ba ḋóiċ leat air gur leis an áit. You (one) *would imagine by him* that he owned the place.

Ní raiḃ a ṫuairisg ann. There wasn't a trace of him there.

Ċoṁ maiṫ agus dá mba ná raiḃ éagcóir ar biṫ ann. *Just as if* it were not wrong.

D'ḟiafruiġ sé cad fé ndeár an sult. He asked *what was the cause* of the merriment.

Cé’r a mac ṫú?	Whose son are you?
Ní ṁaiṫfear puinn duit.	You will meet *your match*.
Ca ḃ’ḟios duit?	How did you know?
A sgéal féin sgéal gaċ éinne.	Everyone is most interested in his own affairs.
Tusa fé ndeár soin.	*You are the cause* of that.
Tá gnó naċ é agam.	I have a *different matter* to look after.
Ní taise ḋom féin.	I am *no exception; i.e.*, I am the same as the others.

The Autonomous Form of the Irish Verb.

It is sometimes necessary or convenient to express an action without mentioning the subject, either because the latter is too general or not of sufficient importance to be mentioned, or because there is some other reason for suppressing it. Most languages have felt this necessity, and various means have been adopted to supply it. The use of the passive voice, or of reflexive verbs, or of circumlocutions, is the method generally adopted in other languages. In Irish there is a special form of the verb for this purpose. As it has no subject expressed it is sometimes called the Indefinite form of the verb as it forms a complete sentence in itself it is also called the Autonomous or Independent form.

An English verb cannot stand without its subject. For example, "walks," "walked," etc., express nothing. The English verbs cannot alone make complete sense. The Autonomous form of Irish verbs can stand alone. The word "Buailtear" is a complete sentence. It means that "the action of striking takes place." The Autonomous form stands without a subject; in fact it cannot be united to a subject, because the moment we express a subject the ordinary 3rd person singular form of the particular tense and mood must be substituted. Buailtear an bord. *Someone* (*they, people, we, etc.*) *strikes the table;* but

buaileann an fear (sé, siad, na daoine, etc.) an bord.

We shall take the sentence: Buailtear an gaḋar le cloiċ ó láiṁ Ṫaiḋg. The word "buailtear" of itself conveys a complete statement, viz., that *the action of striking takes place.* The information given by the single word "buailtear" is restricted to the action. There are circumstances surrounding that action of which we may wish to give information; *e.g.* "What is the object of the action?" "An gaḋar." "What is the instrument used?" "Le cloiċ." "Where did the stone come from?" "Ó láiṁ Ṫaiḋg." We may thus fill in any number of circumstances we please, and fit them in their places by means of the proper prepositions, but these circumstances do not change the nature of the fundamental word "buailtear."

It may be objected that the word "buailtear" in the last sentence is passive voice, present tense, and means "*is struck*" and that "an gaḋar" is the subject of the verb. Granted for a moment that it is passive voice. Now since "Buailteann duine éigin é," *somebody strikes him*, is active voice, as all admit, and by supposition

"buailtear é," *somebody strikes him*, or, *he is struck*, is passive, then comes the difficulty, what voice is "tá ṫar buailte," *somebody is struck?* Surely it is the passive of "buailtear"; and if so "buailtear" itself cannot be passive, though it may be rendered by a passive in English. If we are to be guided merely by the English equivalent, then "buaileann" in the above phrase is as much a passive voice as "buailtear" because it can be correctly translated into English by a passive verb: viz., *He is struck.*

When we come to consider this form in intransitive verbs, our position becomes much stronger in favour of the Autonomous verb. Let us consider the following sentence: Siuḃaltar ar an mbóṫar nuair ḃíonn an bóṫar tirim, aċt nuair ḃíonn an bóṫar fliuċ, siuḃaltar ar an gclaiḋe. *People walk on the road when it is dry, but when the road is wet they walk on the path*. Where is the nominative case of the so called passive verb here? Evidently there is none. The verb stands alone and conveys complete sense. If we wish to express the nominative, the Autonomous form of the verb cannot be used. In the above sentence we might correctly say: Siuḃlann sé (siad, sinn, na daoine, etc.), but not siuḃaltar é (iad, sinn, na daoine, etc.)

Probably classical scholars will draw analogies from Latin and quote such instances as, *Concurritur ad muros. Ventum est ad Vestae. Sic itur ad astra. Deinde venitur ad portam*; where we have intransitive verbs in an undoubtedly passive construction, and therefore, by analogy, the true signification of siubaltar in the above sentence is "*It is walked*," and it is simply an example of the impersonal passive construction. Now, if conclusions of any worth are to be drawn from analogies, the analogies themselves must be complete. The classical form corresponding to the Irish Bítear ag siubal ar an mbóthar nuair bíonn an bóthar tirim, etc., or táthar ag siubal ar an mbóthar anois is wanting, and therefore the analogy is incomplete and deductions from it are of little value.

One of the strongest arguments we have in favour of the Autonomous verb is the fact that the verb "to be" in Irish possesses every one of the forms possessed by transitive and intransitive verbs. The analogy with Latin again fails here. Táthar ag teacht. *Somebody is coming.* Beidhfar ag siubal, *Somebody will be walking.* Nuair mhothuigh an t-athach go rabhthas ag ceangailt a chos, *When the giant perceived that they were binding his legs*.

The Irish Autonomous form cannot be literally translated into English, because no exact counterpart exists in English, hence the usual method of translating this form is to use the English passive voice, but the Irish verb is not therefore passive. To give an instance of the incapability of the English language to express *literally* the force of the Autonomous verb, notice the English translation of the subjoined example of the continued use of the Autonomous verb in an Irish sentence.

“Áit ana-aereaċ is eaḋ an áit sin: nuair ḃítear ag gaḃáil an treo sain i n-am mairḃ na h-oiḋċe, airiġtear coisiḋeaċt d’á déanaṁ ⁊ foṫrom mar ḃeifiḋe ag riṫ ⁊ foṫrom eile mar ḃeifiḋe ag teiċeaḋ, ⁊ annsain airiġtear foṫrom mar ṫiocfaiḋe suas ⁊ mar ḃuailfiḋe ⁊ mar ḃeifiḋe faoi ḃualaḋ ⁊ mar ḃrisfiḋe, ⁊ annsain airiġtear mar ḃeaḋ dearg-ruaṫar ⁊ tóir.”

This passage cannot be literally translated: the following will give a fair idea of its meaning: “That place is frequented by fairies: when one is walking near it in the dead stillness of the night, footsteps are heard and loud noises, as if people were running and fleeing, and then other noises are heard as if people were overtaking (those who

were running away), and were striking and being struck, and as if they were being broken in pieces, and then are heard noises as if they were in hot rout and pursuit."

The Autonomous form of the verb has a passive voice of its own formed by the addition of the verbal adjective (or past participle) of the verb to the Autonomous forms of the verb *to be*; e.g., Tátar buailte, etc.

This form of the Irish verb has a full conjugation through all the moods and tenses, active and passive voices; but has only one form for each tense. All verbs in Irish, with the single exception of the assertive verb is, have this form of conjugation. Is can have no Autonomous form, because it has no meaning by itself. It is as meaningless as the sign of equality (=) until the terms are placed one on each side of it.

To sum up then, the Irish Autonomous form is not passive, for—

(1) All verbs (except is), transitive and intransitive, even the verb tá, have this form of conjugation.

(2) This form has a complete passive voice of its own.

(3) The disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are always used with it; *e.g.*, buailtear é.

(4) Very frequently when a personal pronoun is the object of the Autonomous form of the verb, it is placed last in the sentence or clause to which it belongs, thus giving a very close analogy with the construction of the active verb, already explained in par. 535. Níor ċian dam … gur seolaḋ isteaċ san gcoill seo mé … *It was not long until I was driven into this wood.* Do leiġeasaḋ ó n-a gcréaċtaiḃ iad. *They were healed of their wounds.*

(5) Lastly, and the strongest point of all, in the minds of *native* Irish speakers, without exception, the word buailtear in such sentences as "buailtear an gaḋar" is *active*, and gaḋar is its object. Surely those Irish speakers are the best judges of the true shape of their own thoughts.

We will now give a synopsis of the various forms of the Autonomous verb, beginning with the verb tá.

The Verb TÁ.

tá̇tar[1]		Some-one, we, they, peo-ple, etc.	is, are.
Ní ḟuiltear.[2]			is not, are not.
bítear (bí̇tear).			does be, do be.
Ní ḃítear.			does not be, do not be.
ḃi̇teas (ḃí̇teas).			was, were.
Ní raḃ̇tas.			was not, were not.
bítí.			used to be.
beifar, beifear, beiḋfear, béi̇tear.			will be.
beifí(ḋe), beiḋfi(ḋe), béi̇tí.			would be.
bítear	(Let).		be.
má tá̇tar	(If).		is, are.
má bítear	(If).		does be, do be.
etc.			
dá	(If).		were, would be.

mbeifí go rabtas! (May). be (*for once*).

go mbítear! (May). be (*generally*).

Deirim go bfuiltear, I say that someone, etc., is.

Deirim ná fuiltear, „ „ „ is not.

An Intransitive Verb.

siubaltar	Someone, we, they, people, etc.	walks, walk.
tátar ag siubal.		is (are) walking.
bítear ag siubal.		does (do) be walking.
siubladh.		walked.
bhíteas ag siubal.		was (were) walking.
siubaltaoi.		used to walk.
bítí ag siubal.		used to be walking.
siubalfar.		will walk.
beifar ag siubal.		will be walking.
siubalfaoi.		would walk
beifí ag siubal.		would be walking.
siubaltar	(Let).	walk.
bítear ag siubal	(Let).	be walking.
má siubaltar etc.	(If).	is (are) walking.

dá siuḃaltaoi	(If).	}	{ would be walking.
dá mbeifí ag siuḃal	(If).		were walking.

A Transitive Yerb.

A noun is placed after the active forms in order to show the cases.

Buailtear an clár.	Someone strikes the table.
Tá ṫar ag bualaḋ an ċláir.	Someone is striking the table.
Tá an clár dá (ġá) ḃualaḋ.	The table is being struck.
Bítear buailte.	Someone is struck.
Tá ṫar fé bualaḋ,	Someone is being struck.
Bítear as bualaḋ an ċláir.	Someone usually strikes the table.
Do buaileaḋ an clár.	Someone struck the table.
Ḃíṫeas ag bualaḋ an ċláir.	Someone was striking the table.
Ḃí an clár dá (ġá) bualaḋ.	The table was being struck.
Ḃíṫeas buailte.	Someone was struck.
Ḃíṫeas fé ḃualaḋ.	Someone was being struck.
Buailtí an clár.	Someone used to strike the table.
Bítí ag bualaḋ an ċláir.	Someone used to be striking the table.

Bítí buailte.	Someone used to be struck.
Buailfar (buailfear) an clár.	Someone will strike the table.
Beifar ag bualaḋ an ċláir.	Someone will be striking the table.
Beifar buailte.	Someone will be struck.
Buailfí (buailfiḋe) an clár.	Someone would strike the table.
Beifí ag bualaḋ an ċláir.	Someone would be striking the table.
Beifí buailte.	Someone would be struck.
Buailtear an clár.	Let someone strike the table.
Bítear ag bualaḋ an clár.	Let someone be striking the table.
Má buailtear an clár.	If someone strikes the table.
Má bítear ag bualaḋ an ċláir.	If someone does be striking the table.
etc.	
Dá mbuailfí an clár.	If someone were to strike the table.

Dá mbeifí ag bualaḋ an ċláir.	If someone were to be striking the table.

Before leaving this important subject it may not be uninteresting to see what some Irish grammarians have thought of the Autonomous form.

O'Donovan in his Irish Grammar (p. 183) wrote as follows: —

"The passive voice has no synthetic form to denote persons or numbers; the personal pronouns, therefore, must be always expressed, and placed after the verb; and, by a strange peculiarity of the language, they are always '*in the accusative form*.'

"For this reason some Irish scholars have considered the passive Irish verb to be a **form of the active verb, expressing the action in an indefinite manner**; as, buailtear mé, i.e., *some person or persons, thing or things, strikes or strike me*; buaileaḋ é, *some person or thing (not specified) struck him*. But **it is more convenient in a practical grammar to call this form by the name passive**, as in other languages, and to assume that tú, é, í, and iad, which follow it, are ancient forms of the nominative case."

Molloy says in his Grammar, page 62:—

"Verbs have a third form which may be properly called deponent; as buailtear mé, *I am (usually) beaten*; buailtear ú, *thou art (usually) beaten*; buailtear é, *he is (usually) beaten.* The agent of this form of the verb is never known; but although **verbs of this form always govern the objective case,** like active verbs, still *they must be rendered in English by the passive*; as, buailead iad, *they were beaten*. Here iad is quite passive to the action; for it suffers the action which is performed by some unknown agent."

Again at page 99, he says:—

"But there is another form of the verb which always governs an objective case; and although it must be translated into the passive voice in English, still it is a deponent, and not a passive, form in Irish; as, buailtear mé, etc. The grammarians who maintain that this form of the verb takes a nominative case clearly show that they did not speak the language; for no Irish-speaking person would say buailtear sé, sí, siad. It is equally ridiculous to say that é, í, iad, are nominatives in Irish, although they be found so in Scotch Gaelic."

Further on, at page 143, he states again that “deponent verbs *govern an objective case*.”

Thus we plainly see that O’Donovan and Molloy bear out the fact that the noun or pronoun after the Autonomous form of the verb is in the **accusative case**, though the former says it is more convenient to assume *that it is in the nominative case!*

1. ↑ tátars or táta’s.
2. ↑ fuiltears, fuiltea’s.

Notes

APPENDICES.

Appendix I.

NOUNS OF THE FIRST DECLENSION

abrán, a song.
adastar, a halter.
ádbar, a cause.
admad, wood.
amadán, a fool.
amarc, a sight.
amras, doubt.
aoibneas, delight.
aoileać, manure.
aol, lime.
arán, bread.
ardán, hillock.
arm, an army: pl. airm, arma.
at, swelling or tumour.

átas, gladness.

bád, boat.
balḃán, dummy, (stammerer).
bárr, top.
bás, death.
beagán, a little.
biaḋ, food; gen. bíḋ.
biorán, a pin.
biṫeaṁnaċ, rascal.
blas, taste.
bonn, sole, foundation.
bóṫar, road; nom. pl. bóiṫre.
bradán, a salmon.
bród, joy, pride.
bromaċ, foal or colt.
brón, sorrow.
bruaċ, brink; pl. bruaċa.
buiḋeaċas, thanks.
bun, bottom.

caiseal,[1] a stone fortress.
calaḋ, harbour.
carbad, chariot.
carn, heap.
casán, path.
casúr, hammer.
cat, cat.
ceann, head or end.
ceol, music; pl. ceolta.
ceudlongaḋ,[2] breakfast.
cineál, kind or sort.
cleaṁnas, marriage alliance.
cléireaċ, clerk
clog, bell, clock.
cogaḋ, war; pl. cogṫa or cogaiḋe.
copán, cup.
creideaṁ, faith, religion.
cuan, bay or haven; pl. cuanta.
cuḃar, foam.
cúl, back of the head.

daol, beetle.
deireaḋ, end.
diaḃal, devil.
dinneur, dinner.
doċar, harm.
doiċeall, grudge, reserve.
doṁan, earth, world.
donas, misfortune.
doras, door; pl. doirse.
duaḋ, difficulty.
dúṫċas, inherited instinct.

earball, a tail.
Earraċ, Spring.
eiḋean, ivy.
eolas, knowledge.
eudaċ, cloth, clothes.

fasgaḋ,
fosgaḋ, } shelter.

fiaċ, raven; pl. féiċ or féiġ.
focal, a word; pl. focail or focla.
Foġṁar, Autumn,
fonn, tune or air.

gaḃar, goat.
gaḋar, beagle.
ganndal, gander.
garsún, a young boy.
geaṁar, green com.
geárrcaċ, young bird.
glas, lock,
glór, voice.
gob, beak (of a bird).
greann, humour.
gual, coal.

iarann, iron,
(f)iolar, eagle.
ionad, place,
ísleán, hollow.

laoġ, calf.
lár, middle.
leaḃar, a book ; pl. leaḃair, leaḃra.
leaḃrán, booklet.
leaṫar, leather,
leun, misfortune.
líon, a net ; pl. líonta.
lón, provision,
lorg, a track.

madaḋ or madra, a dog; pl. madraiḋe.
magaḋ, mockery, ridicule,
maor, a steward.
mapt, steer or beeve.
meaṫ, failure,
milleán, blame,
mionnán, kid.
mórán, much, many.
mullaċ, top ; pl. mullaiġe.

naoṁ, a saint.
neart, strength.
ocras, hunger.
ór, gold.

págánaċ, a pagan.
páipeur, paper.
píobán, windpipe or neck,
port, tune or air.
preuċán, crow.

rian, track ; gen. riain.
ród, road.
rún, secret

sac, a sack.
sagart, a priest.
saġas, kind or sort.
salann, salt.
saṁraḋ, summer.
saoġal, life, world.

saor, craftsman, artisan.
saoṫar, exertion, work.
seaḃac, hawk.
seod, a precious thing, jewel; pl. seoda.
sgeul, news ; pl. sgeula; sgeulta, stories.
slaḃraḋ, chain; pl. slaḃraiḋe.
sop, wisp.

sórt, }
sórd, } kind or sort.

spiorad, a spirit.
spor, a spur.
spórt, sport.
stór, treasure store.
suaiṁneas, repose.

tamall, a short space of time.
taoiseaċ, a captain, a leader.
teallaċ, hearth.

trosgán, furniture.
tús, beginning.

1. ↑ This word also means a child's spinning "top."
2. ↑ In spoken language breicfeasta, *m.*, is used for "*breakfast.*"

Notes

Appendix II.

A list of feminine nouns ending in a broad consonant, belonging to the Second Declension.

Nom.	Gen.	Meaning.
aḋarc	aḋairce	a horn
bábóg	bábóige	a doll
báisdeaċ	báisdiġe	rain
barraċ	barraiġe	tow
beaċ	beiċe	bee
beann	beinne	a mountain peak
bearaċ	bearaiġe	a heifer
bláṫaċ	bláiṫċe or bláṫaiġe	buttermilk
bos	boise	palm (of the hand)
breiṫ	breiṫe	judgment
breug	bréige	a lie
briaṫar	bréiṫre	word of honour
bróg	bróige	a shoe
bruiġean	bruiġne	palace, fort
buiḋean	buiḋne	a troop

cailleaċ	cailliġe		an old woman
cealg	ceilge		deceit.
cearc	circe		hen
ceárd	céirde		a trade
ciall	céille		sense
cian	céine	(pl. cianta)	distance
ciaróg	ciaróige		beetle
cíor	círe		a comb
cláirseaċ	cláirsiġe		a harp
clann	cloinne	or clainne	children
cloċ	cloiċe		a stone
cluas	cluaise		an ear
clúṁ	clúiṁe		plumage
cneaḋ	cneiḋe		a wound
colpaċ	colpaiġe		a heifer
cos	coise		a foot
craoḃ	craoiḃe		a branch

craoiseaċ	craoisiġe	a spear
cpeaċ	creiċe	plunder
creag	creige	crag
críoċ	críċe	end
croċ	croiċe	gibbet
cros	croise	cross
cuaċ	cuaiċe	cuckoo
cuileog	cuileoige	a fly
daḃaċ	daiḃċe	a vat
dealḃ	deilḃe	a form
dealg	deilge	a thorn
deoċ	diġe	a drink
díon	díne	protection
doineann	doininne	bad weather
dreaċ	dreiċe	face, visage
easóg	easóige	a weasel
feaċt	feiċte	time, occasion

fearg	feirge	anger
feusóg	feusóige	beard
fiṫċeall	fiṫċille	chess
fleaḋ	fleiḋe	a feast
fleasg	fleisge	wreath
freuṁ	fréiṁe	a root
fuinneog	fuinneoige	window
fuinnseog	fuinnseoige	an ash
fuiseog	fuiseoige	a lark
gaḃlóg	gaḃlóige	a little fork
gaoṫ	gaoiṫe	wind
gealaċ	gealaiġe	moon
geug	géige	branch
gíog	gíge	squeak
geirseaċ	geirsiġe	girl
giorsaċ	giorsaiġe	
glún	glúine	knee
grian	gréine	sun

gruag	gruaige	hair
iall	éille	thong
inġean	inġine	daughter
láṁ	láiṁe	hand
lasóg	lasóige	match (light)
laṫaċ	laiṫċe, laṫaiġe	mud, mire
leac	leice	a stone flag
leaṫ	leiṫe	half, side
long	luinge	ship
lúb	lúibe	loop
luċ	luiċe	mouse
meur	méire	finger
muc	muice	pig
neaṁ	neiṁe	heaven
óinseaċ	óinsiġe	fool (f.)

ordóg	ordóige	thumb
piast	péiste	reptile
piastóg	piastóige	worm
píob	píbe	musical pipe
pluc	pluice	cheek
póg	póige	kiss
riar	réire	order, regulation
sál	sáile	heel
sealg	seilge	hunt
searc	seirce	love
seisreaċ	seisriġe	plough
sgeaċ	sgeiċe	hawthorn bush
sgian	sgine	knife
sgiaṁ	sgéiṁe	comeliness
sgiaṫ	sgéiṫe	shield
sgórnaċ	sgórnaiġe	throat

sgríob	sgríbe	scrape
síon	síne	weather
slat	slaite	rod
soineann	soininne	fine weather
speal	speile	scythe
splanc	splaince	spark, thunderbolt.
srón	sróine sróna	nose
taoḃ	taoiḃe	side
teud	téide	string
tonn	tuinne	wave
treaḃ	treiḃe	tribe
uḃ	uiḃe	an egg

Appendix III.

NOUNS BELONGING TO THE THIRD DECLENSION.

(a) All personal nouns ending in óir, úir,

(b) All abstract nouns ending in aċt.

(c) Verbal nouns in aċt, áil, and aṁain.

(d) The following list:—

Nom.	Genitive.	Meaning.
acṫ	acṫa	decree
ainm	anma	name
aisíoc	aisigṫe, aiseagṫa	repayment, restitution
altóir	altóra	altar
anál	anála	breath
anam	anma	soul
Aoḋ	Aoḋa	Hugh
aos	aosa	folk, people
áṫ	áṫa	ford
beannacṫ	beannacṫa	blessing
bain-ríoġan	bain-ríoġna	queen
bior	beara	a (cooking) spit
biṫ (bioṫ)	beaṫa	life
bláṫ	bláṫa	blossom
bliaḋain	bliaḋna	a year
blioċt	bleacṫa	buttermilk

boṫ	boṫa	tent, cot
bruġ	broġa	palace, mansion
buaċaill	buaċalla	boy
buaiḋ	buaḋa	victory
buaiḋirt	buaiḋearṫa	trouble.
caḃair	caḃpa caḃraċ	help
cáin	cána	tax
Cáisg	Cásga	Easter
caṫ	caṫa	battle
cion	ceana	love, desire, affection
cíos	cíosa	rent
ciṫ, *m.* (cioṫ)	ceaṫa	shower
cleas	cleasa	a trick
cliaṁain, *m.*	cliaṁna	son-in-law
cnáṁ	cnáṁa	bone
codlaḋ	codalta	sleep
cóir	córa	justice compact, covenant

connrad	connarta	
cosnaṁ	cosanta	defence
crád	cráda	torture, destruction
crios	creasa	belt
cruit	crota	form
cuairt	cuarta (or cuairte)	visit
cuid	coda	part, share
dáil	dála	account, meeting
dán	dána	destiny
dat	data	colour
deanaṁ	deanṁa	make or shape
Diarmuid	Diarmuda	Dermot
doctúir	doctúra	doctor
drúct	drúcta	dew
druim, *m.*	droma	a back
éarc	éarca	tax, tribute
eud	euda	jealousy

eulod	euloda	escape, elopement
fát	fáta	cause, reason
feart	fearta	a grave, tomb
feartainn	fearṫanna	rain
feidm	feadma	service, use
feoil	feola	flesh, meat
fiacail	fiacla	a tooth
fíon	fíona	wine
fios	feasa	knowledge
flaiṫ	flaṫa	prince
foġ	foġa	a sudden attack
foġluim	foġlumṫa	learning
fógrad	fógarṫa	decree
fuagrad	fuagarṫa	announcement
fuacṫ, *m.*	fuacṫa	cold
fuasglad	fuasgluiġṫe	ransom, redemption
fuaṫ	fuaṫa	hatred
		blood

fuil	fola	
gleann	gleanna	valley
gníoṁ	gníoṁa	act, deed
goin	gona	wound
gráḋ	gráḋa	love
greim, *m.*	greama	a piece
gruṫ	groṫa	curds
gul	gola	weeping
guṫ	goṫa	a voice
iarraiḋ	iarraḋa	a desire, request
iaṫ	iaṫa	land, country
iomáin	iomána	hurling (a game)
iomraḋ	iomráiḋte	report, notice
leabaḋ, *f.*	leabṫa	a bed
leaċt	leaċta	a grave
lionn	leanna	beer, ale

lios	leasa	a fort
loċ	loċa	lake
loċt	loċta	reproach
lus	losa	an herb
maḋm	maḋma	defeat, rout
maiṫeaṁ	maiṫte	forgiveness
meas	measa	esteem
mian	miana	desire
mil	meala	honey
moḋ	moḋa	manner
móin	móna	bog
muir	mara	sea
óg	óga	a young person
olann	olna	wool
ollaṁain	ollaṁna	instruction
onóir	onóra	honour
osglaḋ	osgailte	admission, opening

rat	rata	luck
reacht, *m.*	reachta	law
riocht	reachta	a form
rit	reata	running
samail	samla	an equal, like
Samain	Samna	November
sgát	sgáta	shadow
scot	scota	flower
seal	seala	a space of time
sioc	seaca	frost
síothcáin	síothcána	peace
slioct	sleacta	posterity
smacht, *m.*	smachta	a curb
snám	snáma	a swim
sog	soga	pleasure
sraith	sratha	a layer
srón	sróna	nose

sruṫ	sroṫa	stream
táilliúir	táilliúra	tailor
táin	tána	a drove
tionsgaṁ	tionsganta	purpose, project
toil	tola	a will
tráiġ	tráġa	a strand
tréad	tréada	flock, drove
treoir	treora	guide, troop
treus	treusa	battle
troid	troda	fight, quarrel
Tuaim	Tuama	Tuam
tuaṫ	tuaṫa	tribe
uaiṁ	uaṁa	cave
uċt	oċta	breast

Appendix IV.

THE NOUNS OF THE FIFTH DECLENSION.

The letters in brackets give the termination of the genitive singular.

aḃ or aḃa, gen. aḃann, a river ; pl. aiḃne or aiḃneaċa.

aonta(ḋ), license, permission.

Ara(-n), Isle of Arran; pl. Airne, The Arran Isles.

ara(-n), kidney.

beoir (beoraċ), beer.

bráġa(d), *m.*, the upper part of the breast

breiṫeaṁ(an), *m.*, a judge.

bró(-n), a quern, handmill; pl. bróinte.

caora(ċ), a sheep; pl. caoirigġ.

cara(d), a friend; pl. cáirde.

caṫair(-ṫraċ), a city, fortress.

caṫaoir(-reaċ), a chair.

ceardċa(-n), a forge, smithy.

ceaṫraṁa(-n), a quarter.

clais(-saċ), a furrow.

cóisir (-sreaċ), a feast.

coṁursa(-n), neighbour; pl. coṁursain.

coṁla(-ċ), a gate, door.

coṁra(-n), a coffer, cupboard, coffin.

coróin(-naċ), a crown.

cráin(-naċ), a sow.

cú, gen. con, a hound; pl. coin, cona, hounds.

cúil(-aċ), a corner.

cuisle(-ann), a pulse, vein.

dáileaṁ(-an), a cup-bearer.

dair(-aċ), an oak.

deárna(-n), palm of the hand.

díle(-ann), flood, deluge; pl. díleanna, díleanaċa

ealaḋa(-n), science, learning.

easaonta(-ḋ), disagreement, disobedience.

eascú (compound of cú), an eel.

eisir (-sreaċ), an oyster.

eoċair (eoċraċ), a key.

eorna(-n) [or gen. same as nom.], barley.

fealsaṁ(-an), *m.*, philosopher

feiċeaṁ(an), *m.*, debtor.

Feoir(-aċ), The Nore.

fioġair(aċ), a sign, mark.

fiċe(ad), twenty.

foġail(ġtaċ), plunder.

gaḃa(-n), *m.*, a smith; pl. gaiḃne

gráin (gránaċ), hatred.

guala(-n), a shoulder; pl. guailne, guailleaċa.

ionga(-n), a nail (of the finger); pl. ingne.

laċa(-n), a duck,

láir (lárać), a mare.

lánaṁa(-n), a married couple.

lasair (lasraċ), a flame.

láṫair (láṫraċ), a level plain.

leaca(-n), m., a cheek; pl. leacaineaċa.

lurga(-n), the shin; pl. luirgne.

mainistir(-treaċ), a monastery.

meanma(-n), the mind.

míle(-aḋ), a soldier, warrior.

náṁa(-d), an enemy; pl. náiṁde

Nodlaig (Nodlag), Christmas.

ollaṁ(-an), a doctor, professor.

pearsa(-n), a person.

riaġail (riaġlać), a rule.

roġa(-n), a choice; pl. roġnaća, roġaineaća.

sail (salać), a beam.

seanga(-n), a cormorant.

stail (stalać), a stallion.

tal(-ać), a wedge.

talaṁ, gen. talṁan, land.

Teaṁair (Teaṁrać), Tara.

teanga(-n or ḋ), tongue; pl. teangṫa.

teora(-n), boundary, limit.

uille(-ann), an elbow.

ulċa(-n), a beard.

ursa(-n), a door-jamb.

Appendix V

A LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBAL NOUNS

Verb	Meaning.	Verbal Noun
abair	say	rád
admuig	confess	admáil
bain	snatch, take[1]	baint
beir	bear, carry	breit
bligˊ	milk	bligˊian
bruit	cook	bruit
buain	reap,	buaint
caill	lose	cailleamain
cait	throw, open, consume	caiteam, caitead
ceannuigˊ	buy	ceannacˊ
ceil	conceal	ceilt
céim	step	céim
cinn	determine	cinneamain
claoid	defeat	claoi
coimeud	watch, guard	coimeud)

coisriġ	bless	coisreagan coisreagaḋ
coisg	prevent	cosg
coṁraic	fight	coṁrac
cogair	whisper	cogar
congaiḃ	keep	congḃáil
corruiġ	stir. move	corruiġe
cosain	defend	cosnaṁ, cosaint
creid	believe	creideṁaint
cuir	put, send	cur
dearmad	forget	dearmad
díol	sell	díol
druid	shut (M. move towards)	druidiní
dúisiġ	awake	dúiseaċt, dúsgaḋ
éag	die	éag

éiliġ	claim	éileaṁ, éiliuġaḋ
éiriġ	rise, arise	éiriġe
éist	listen	éisteaċt
faġ	find, get	faġáil
fág	leave	fágáil
fan	wait	fanaṁaint
fás	grow	fás
fead	whistle	feadġail
fear	pour out, shower	fearṫain
feic	see	feicsint
feuċ	behold, look	feuċaint
fiafruiġ	ask, enquire	fiafruiġe
foġluim	learn	foġluim
foill	suit, fit	foilleaṁaint
fóir	help, succour	fóiriṫin
freasdail	attend, serve	freasdal
fuaiġ	sew	fuaġail

fuagair (fógair)	announce, proclaim	fuagairt, fuagra fógra
fulaing	suffer	fulang
gaḃ	take, go	gaḃáil
gáir	call, shout	gáirm
geall	promise	geallaṁain
géim	bellow, low	géimneaċ or géimeaḋ
glaoḋ	call	glaoḋaċ
gluais	journey, go	gluasaċt
goil	weep	gol
guiḋ	pray	guiḋe
iarr	try, ask, entreat	iarraiḋ
imreas	contend, wrestle	imreasgáil
imṫiġ	go away	imṫeaċt
innis	tell carry	innsint

iomċair		iomċar
iompuiġ	turn	iompóḋ
íoc	pay	íoc
ional	wash	ionlat
ionnsuiġ	approach	ionnsuiġe
iṫ	eat	iṫe
leag	knock down	leagan
lean	follow	leanaṁaint
léig	let, allow	léigean
ling	leap	ling
lomair	strip, pull off	lomairt, lomraḋ
luiġ	lie (down)	luiġe
mair	live, exist	maireaċtain marṫain
maiṫ	forgive	maiṫeaṁ
meas	think	meas

oil	nourish	oiieaṁaint
ól	drink[2]	ól
reic	sell	reic
réiḋtiġ	arrange	réiḋteaċ
rinnc	dance	rinnce
riṫ	run	riṫ
roinn)	divide	roinnt
saoil	think	saoilsin
seas	stand	seasaṁ
seinn	play (an instrument)	seinnm
sgar	separate	sgaraṁaint
sgrios	destroy, erase	sgrios
sguir	cease	sgur
siuḃail	walk	siuḃal
slád	slay	slád
snáṁ	swim	snáṁ

stad	stop	stad
suiḋ	sit	suiḋe
taḃair	give	taḃairt
tairg	offer	tairgsin
tarraing	draw	tarraing
teagasg	teach, instruct	teagasg
teilg	fling	teilgean
toċrais	wind	toċras
tóg	lift	tógail tógaint
tóiriġ	search for, pursue	tóiriġeaċt
tréig	forsaken, abandon	tréigean
tuig	understand	tuigsint, tuisgint
tuill	earn, deserve	tuilleaṁ tuilleaṁain
tuirling	alight, descend	tuirling

1. ↑ To take a thing not offered is “bain;” but when offered, “glac.”
2. ↑ Drunk, meaning intoxicated, is not ólta, but “ar meisge.”

Notes

Appendix VI

A LIST OF VERBS BELONGING TO FIRST CONJUGATION.

bac, stop, hinder, meddle.
bain, snatch, take.
báiṫ, drown.
béic, bawl.
bog, soften.
bliġ, milk.
bris, break.
brúiġ, bruise.
buail, beat.
buaiḋ, give success.

caill, lose.
caoin, lament.
caiṫ, waste, spend, eat or cast.
cam, bend, make crooked.
can, sing.
caoċ, blind.
cas, twist, turn, wind, wry.

ceap, think.
cead, allow, leave, permit.
ceil, hide, conceal.
cinn, resolve.
cíor, comb.
claoiḋ, defeat.
claon, bend, crook.
coisg, stop, hinder.
craiṫ, shake.
croċ, hang.
creid, believe, trust.
criṫ, tremble, quake.
crom, bend, stoop.
crom ar, set about.
cum, form; shape.
cuir, put, send.
cuir ar bun, establish.
cuir caoi air, mend.

daor, condemn, blame.
dearḃ, ascertain, assure.

dearc, look, observe, remark.
dearmad, forget.
ding, press, stuff, push.
díol, sell.
dóiġ, burn, consume.
doirt, spill, shed.
druid, shut. move.
dual, plait, fold.
dún, close.

éist, listen.

fair, watch, guard.
fáisg, squeeze, crush.
fan, stay, wait, stop.
fás, grow.
fead, whistle.
feall, deceive, cheat.
feann, flay, strip.
fear, pour out, shower.
feuċ, behold, look.

fill, return, come back.
feudaim, I can.
fliuċ, wet, moisten, drench.
foill, suit, fit.
fóir, help, relieve, succour.
foġluim, learn.

gáir, shout, call.
geall, promise.
gearr, cut.
géill, obey, submit.
glac, take, reserve.
glan, cleanse.
glaoḋ, call.
gluais, journey, travel, go.
goid, steal.
goil, weep, lament.
goin, wound.
graif, sign, mark.
guiḋ, pray.

iarr, ask, seek, request, beseech.
íoc, pay, atone.
iṫ, eat.

las, light, kindle, blaze.
leag, throw down.
lean, follow, pursue.
léiġ, road.
léig, grant, suffer, permit.
léim, leap.
ling, leap, bounce, start.
líon, fill, surfeit, cram.
loisg, singe, scorch, burn.
lúb, bend, crook.
luiġ, lie.

mair, last, exist, remain.
marḃ, kill, murder.
maiṫ, forgive.
maoṫ, wet, steep.
meall, deceive, defraud.

meas, estimate, think.
meaṫ, fade, wither.
mill, spoil, destroy.
mol, praise.
múin, teach, instruct.

neasg tie, join.
niġ, wash.

oil, nurse, cherish.
oir, suit, fit.
ól, drink.

pléasg, crack.
póg, kiss.
poll, pierce, penetrate.
preab, spring, leap.

reic, sell.
reub, tear, burst.
riṫ, run, flee.

roinn, divide.
ruaiġ, pursue, rout.

sáiṫ, thrust, stab.
saoil, pit, reflect, think.
saor, deliver.
sgaoil, loose, let go.
sguir, cease, desist.
seas, stand.
séid, blow.
seol, teach, drive, sail.
seinn, play (music).
sgar, separate, divide.
sgríoḃ, write.
sgrios, sweep, scrape, destroy.
sil, drop, let fall, sink.
sín, stretch, extend.
sméid, beckon, wink.
sluig, swallow.
sṅáṁ, swim, float.
stad, stop.

stad de, desist.
suiḋ, sit.

tairg, offer.
taċt, choke.
teiṫ. flee.
toġ, choose, select.
tóg, take up, lift.
treaḃ, plough, till.
tréig, forsake, abandon.
troid, fight, quarrel.
tuig, understand.
tuill, earn, deserve.
tuit, fall.

Appendix VII.

LIST OF SYNCOPATED VERBS.

agair, entreat (avenge).
aiṫin, recognize.

bagair, threaten.

casgair, slaughter.
ceangail, bind.
cigil, tickle.
coigil, spare.
codail, sleep.
cosain, defend.
cuimil, rub.

díbir, banish.

eitil, fly.

fóġain, serve.
freagair, answer.
freasdail, attend, serve.

(f)osgail, open.
fuagair, proclaim.
fulaing, suffer.
fusgail, relieve.

innis, tell.
ingil, graze.
imir, play.
iomċair, carry.
íoḋbair, offer.

laḃair, speak.
lomair, strip, bare.

músgail, awaken.

saltair, trample.
seaċain, avoid.

tomail, consume, eat.
toċail, root.
tarraing, draw.
tionóil, gather.

toċrais, wind.
tuirling, descend.

Appendix VIII.

ENDINGS OF THE REGULAR VERBS IN PRESENT-DAY USAGE.

Broad Terminations.		Slender Terminations.	
Imperative.		**Imperative.**	
SING.	PLU.	SING.	PLU.
1. —	-amaois (-amuis). -am.	1. —	-imís (-eamuis). -eam.
2. [root]	-aiḋ	2. [root]	-iḋ
3. -aḋ.	-aidís, -adaois.	3. -eaḋ.	-idís.
Present Tense.		**Present Tense.**	
1. -aim.	-amaoid, -amuid.	1. -im.	-imíd (-imid).
2. -air.	-ann siḃ.	2. -ir.	-eann siḃ.
3. -ann.	-aid.	3. -eann.	-id.
Imperfect.		**Imperfect.**	
1. -ainn.	-amaois (-amuis).	1. -inn.	-imís (-imis).
2. -tá.	-aḋ siḃ.	2. -teá.	-eaḋ siḃ.
3. -aḋ.	-aidís (-adaois).	3. -eaḋ.	-idís.

	Past.			Past.	
1.	-as.	-amar.	1.	-eas.	-eamar.
2.	-ais.	-aḃar.	2.	-is.	-eaḃar.
3.	[no ending]	-adar.	3.	[no ending]	-eadar.
	Future.			**Future.**	
1.	-fad.	-famaoid (-famuid).	1.	-fead.	-fimíd (-fimid).
2.	-fair.	-faiḋ siḃ.	2.	-fir.	-fiḋ siḃ.
3.	-faiḋ.	-faid.	3.	-fiḋ.	-fid.
	Conditional.			**Conditional.**	
1.	-fainn.	-famaois (-famuis).	1.	-finn.	-fimís (-fimis).
2.	-fá.	-faḋ siḃ.	2.	-feá.	-feaḋ siḃ.
3.	-faḋ.	-faidís (-fadaois).	3.	-feaḋ.	-fidís.

Appendix IX.

EARLY MODERN FORMS OF THE VERBS.

IS.

We give only those forms which have not already been given in the body of the Grammar.

Dependent Present: -rab; (as in gurab, *that it is*, darab, *to which or whom it is*; munab, *if it is not*).

Obsolete Dependent Present: -aḋ; (as in gonaḋ, *that it is*, danaḋ, *to which or whom it is*). This form occurs frequently in early modern writers. A remnant of it is found in the word giod or giḋ, *though it is*.

Past: fa.

The form fa of the past though frequently found in early modern writers is now obsolete.

Dependent Past: -r ḃa (sometimes written -r ḃo), as in gur ḃa, *that it was*; dar ḃa, *to whom or which it*

was; munar ḃa, *if it was not*; ar ḃa, *was it?* níor ḃa, *it was not*.

The full form of the Dependent Past, though sometimes found in early modern writers is now contracted to -rḃ' before vowels, and to -r before consonants.

Subjunctive: Dámaḋ (dá mbaḋ), *if it were;* gémaḋ (gé mbaḋ), *though it were.*

TÁ.

Imperative.

1.	—	bímís, bíom.
2.	bí.	bíḋ, bíḋiḋ.
3.	bíoḋ	bídís.

Present Tense.

	Absolute.		Dependent.	
1.	atáim	atámaoid.	fuilim	fuilimíd
2.	ataoi	atáṫaoi.	fuile (-ir)	fuiltí.
3.	atá	atáid.	fuil	fuilid.

Habitual Present.

1. bím bímíd.
2. bír bíṫí.
3. bí(ḋ) bid.

Past Tense.

	Absolute.		Dependent.	
1.	ḃádas	ḃámar.	raḃas	raḃamar
2.	ḃádais	ḃáḃar.	raḃais	raḃaḃar.
3.	ḃí	ḃádar	raiḃe	raḃadar.

Future Tense.

1. biad biamaoid, biam.
2. biair biaṫaoi.
3. biaiḋ, bia biaid.

Relative: ḃias.

Conditional—Secondary Future.

1. Ḃéinn ḃéimís.
2. ḃéiṫeá ḃiaḋ siḃ
3. ḃiaḋ, ḃeiṫ ḃéidís.

Subjunctive Mood.
Present Tense.

1. raḃad ra ḃmaoid, ra ḃam.
2. ra ḃair ra ḃ ṫaoi.
3. rai ḃe ra ḃaid.

ENDINGS OF THE REGULAR VERBS IN EARLY MODERN IRISH.

The following is a table showing the various endings of the regular verbs in Early Modern Irish. It is not intended that these forms should be learned by the student; they are given merely for *reference*:—

Broad Terminations.		Slender Terminations.	
Imperative.		**Imperative.**	
SING.	PLU.	SING.	PLU.
1. —	-am.	1. —	-eam.
2. [root]	-aiḋ.	2. [root]	-iḋ.
3. -aḋ.	-(a)daois.	3. -eaḋ.	-(i)dís.
Present Tense.		**Present Tense.**	
1. -aim.	-(a)maoid.	1. -im.	-(i)míd.
2. -air.	-taoi.	2. -ir.	-tí.
3. -aiḋ.	-aid.	3. -iḋ.	-id.
Imperfect		**Imperfect.**	
1. -ainn.	-amaois.	1. -inn.	-(i)mís.
2. -tá.	-taoi.	2. -teá.	-tí.
3. -aḋ.	-(a)daois.	3. -eaḋ.	-(i)dís.
Past.		**Past.**	
1. -as.	-amar.	1. -eas.	-eamar.
2. -ais.	-aḃar.	2. -is.	-eaḃar.
3. (no ending).	-adar.	3. (no ending)	-eadar.
Future.		**Future.**	
1. -fad.	-fam(aoid)	1. -fead.	-feam

					(fimíd)
2.	-fair.	-faoi.	2.	-fir.	-fí.
3.	-faiḋ.	-faid.	3.	-fiḋ.	-fid.
	Conditional.			**Conditional.**	
1.	-fainn.	-famaois.	1.	-finn.	-fimís.
2.	-fá.	-faoi.	2.	-feá.	-fí.
3.	-faḋ.	-fadaois.	3.	-peaḋ.	-fidís.

Irregular Verbs.

It is principally in the future tense that the inflexions of the irregular verbs in Early Modern Usage differ from the forms now generally used.

Future Tense

1.	(no termination)	am (-maoid).
2.	air	taoi.
3.	a	aid.

The following verbs took no inflexion in the 3rd person singular of the present time. The forms in brackets are the dependent forms:—

Do-ḃeir (taḃair), deir (abair), do-ġeiḃ (faġaiḃ, faġḃann), do-ġní, do-ċí (faic), (cluin), tig, téid.

The following had no inflexion in the 1st person singular past tense :—

Aduḃairt, (duḃart), atċonnaċ (faca) tánag, cuala, ránag.

INDEX.

The numbers refer to the paragraphs.

A, *voc. part*, 21*d*.

a, *poss. adj.*, 522.

a, *rel.*, 26*e*, 233, &c., 546, 554.

a, *part.*, 169.

a, *prep.*, 605(2).

ab, 339,

ȧba, 119.

abair, 35*c*, 355.

abraim, 357.

ȧbus, 436.

-aċ, 467*a*.

aċt go, 550.

adeirim, 357.

adtuaiḋ, 441.

aduȧbairt, 359.

ag, 191, 217, 617.

agá, 544.
aġaiḋ, 86, 89.
agom, 191.
agus, 154, 628(2).
aicíd, 88.
aiġṫe, 86.
áilne, 10, 43*d*
áirde, 166.
áirdeoċad, 297.
aingeal, 65.
ainm, 43(4), 104.
áit, 14, 84, 530 (*note*).
Alba, 129, 473(2).
áluinn, 35*b*, 144.
am, 104.
aṁ (aiṁ), *prefix*. 455.
áṁ, áṁaċ, 433.
amaċ, 433.
-aṁail, 467*c*
aṁáin, 172.
amáraċ, 434.

ámṫaċ, 433.
amuiċ, 433.
amuiġ, 433.
an, *intens part.*, 161.
an, *def. art.*, 39, 40, 470, &c.
an, *interrog. part.*, 26*e*.
anall, 438.
anam, 104.
an-ċuid, 198.
andeas, 441.
andiu, 434.
aniar, 441.
aníos, 436.
ann, 39, 604, 627.
annsa, 166.
anoċt, 434.
anoir, 441.
anonn, 438.
anuas, 436.
aoiḃinn, 35*b*, 144.
aoiḃneas, 131.

Aoine, 447.
aoin’ne, 64.
aoinneaċ, 64, 241.
aoirde, 166.
aon, *numer.*, 172, 505, 509.
aon, *indef. adj.*, 197, 200
aonaċ, 58.
aonar, 177.
aonṁaḋ, 173, 504.
ár, *poss. adj.*, 14, 26*a*, 522.
ar, *pron.*, 237.
ar, *interrog.*, 278.
ar, *prep.*, 219, 578, 618.
ar, *verb*, 423.
ar biṫ, 197.
ar feaḋ, 613*d*.
árd, 166.
árdán, 42*d*.
árduiġ, 297, 315*d*.
aréir, 434.
arm, 69

ars, 423.
as, 225, 919.
a’s, 154.
aṫair, 43(3), 132.
atċím, 390.

Ba (bó), 132.
ba (*verb*), 158, 334, 338, 340, 341.
bádóir, 42*c*, 100.
baile, 113.
bailiġ, 293.
bán, 165.
bás, 14.
bas, 14.
beaċ, 79.
beag, 166.
beagán, 198, 241.
bealaċ, 58.
bean, 132.
ḃeas, 326.
beaṫa, 131.

beiḋfear, 326.
beiḋfí, 327.
béim, 87.
beir, 342, 618(7*c*).
ḃeirim, 347, 618(7*b*)
beirt, 177, 481.
ḃeiṫ, 327, 330.
béiṫear, 326.
béiṫí, 327.
beiṫte, 284.
beo, 148.
biaḋ, 64.
ḃíos, 322.
bítear, 319, 322, 329.
ḃíṫeas, 324.
bítí, 323.
bláiṫċe, 86.
bláṫaċ, 86.
bó, 132.
bóṫar, 65.
braon, 199.

brat, 163.
brátair, 132.
breág, 166.
Brian, 64.
breitheamh, 42*b*, 131.
Brianach, 486.
briathar, 86, 131.
bród, 649.
bruach, 56, 66.
bruidhean, 35*a*, 85.
brúigh, 315*b*.
buachaill, 43(3), 105.
buaidh, 43(4).
buail, 261, &c.
buailtear, 251.
bualadh, 289.
buidhean, 35*a*, 85.
buin (bó), 132.
bhur, 26*a*, 522.

Cá, 26*e*, 278.

ca, 202.
ċa, 600.
caḃair, 35*a*.
cáċ, 241.
cad, 243.
cad na ṫaoḃ, 435.
cad ċuige, 435.
cad fáṫ, 435.
caidé, 243.
cailín, 43*e*, 111.
caill, 316*e*.
cailleaċ, 77.
cáin, 105, 131.
cáirde, 121.
caiṫ, 316*e*.
ċan, 600.
caoi, 114.
caoin, 315*b*.
caor, 66.
caora, 125.
capall, 37, 69.

cár, 278.
ċar, 600.
cara, 121.
carraig, 35*a*.
caṡoin, 433.
caṫain, 433, 435.
caṫair, 35*a*.
Caṫaoir, 115.
caṫaoir, 126.
cé, 243, 435.
ceaċtar, 242.
cead, 11.
céad, 14, 67, 175, 511
céad (*first*), 167, 505.
ceann, 200*b*, 513.
ceannaċ, 293.
ceannuiġ, 293.
ceap, 67.
cearc, 43a, 78.
ceart, 64, 654.
ceaṫair, 171.

ceaṫrar, 177, 481.
céile, 246.
céim, 87.
ceiṫre, 508.
ceo, 132.
i ceoċa (ceo), 132.
ceoḋana (ceo), 132.
ceol, 8, 67.
ceud, 167, 505.
Ceudaoin, 447.
ceurd, 243.
cia 202, 243, 245.
ciaċ (ceo), 132.
cia ṁeud, 202.
cibé, 237.
ċím, 389.
cinn, 513.
cioca, 243, 435.
cionnus, 435, 557.
ciṫ, 104.
ciúṁais, 88.

clann, 86.
clár, 68.
cleas, 104.
cliaṁain, 105.
coictiḋis, 88.
cloinne, 86.
clos, 398.
cnáṁ (cnáiṁ), 96.
cneas, 64, 66.
cnoc, 63.
codail, 35*c*.
codlaḋ, 10.
cogaḋ, 67.
coigil, 302, &c.
coigilt, 313.
coileaċ, 59.
coill, 89, 131.
coiṁlíon, 32 (note).
coin, 119.
cóir, 14, 145, 654.
coisg, 316*b*.

coiste, 14.
ċoṁ, 154.
coṁnuiġṫe, 565.
cóṁra, 131.
coṁursain, 119.
conad, 435.
ċonnac, 392.
Connaċta, 130.
ċonnaic, 392.
connraḋ, 105.
conus, 435.
coróin, 131.
cos, 76.
cosain, 315*c*.
cóta, 110.
cré, 132.
creid, 316*c*
créiḋeana (cré), 132.
creidfead, 280.
creud, 243.
criaḋ (cré), 132.

crios, 98.
croiḋe, 114.
crónaċ, 131.
cuaċ, 131.
cuaḋṫas, 411.
ċuaiḋ, 411.
ċuala, 398.
cualaṫas, 398.
cuan, 67.
cuid, 105, 198, 241, 524, &c.
cúig, 508.
cúigear, 177, 481.
’ċuile, 242.
cúinne, 113.
cuir, 316*b*.
cuirim, 618(8).
cúis, 87.
cuisle, 124.
ċum, 223, 620.
ċun, 603.

Dá, *numeral*, 514, &c.
dá (do + a), 544.
dá, *conj.*, 26*e*, 552.
-ḋa, 467*d*.
daḃaċ, 86.
daiḃċe, 86.
daille, 43*d*.
dála, 603.
dálta, 603.
daoi, 114.
daoine, 114.
dar, 424.
dár, 278.
dara, 508.
darḃ, 542.
Dardaoin, 447.
dáréag, 177, 481.
daṫ, 104.
Dé (Dia), 132.
de, 163, 227, 606(1), 621.
deacair, 145.

deaċas, 411.
deaġ, 493, 494(2).
deaġas, 411.
déan, 316*e*.
dearḃráṫair, 132,
deirḃṡiair, 132.
deirḃṡiúr, 132.
dearc, 387.
deárnas, 279, 381.
deiċ, 507.
deil, 87.
dein, 381.
deiċneaḃar, 177.
deirim, 337.
deisceart, 442.
deoċ, 86.
deor, 66, 200.
deun, 377.
Dia (*God*), 132.
dia (*day*), 448.
dias, 177, 481.

díbeaṙta, 314.
díbir, 315*c*.
diġe, 86.
díleas, 141.
díreaċ, 139.
dlaoi, 114.
dó, *numeral*, 14, 171.
do, *poss. adj.*, 182, 521.
do, *prefix*, 287, 455.
do, *before past tense*, 276.
do, *prep.* 188, 220, 606(1), 622.
dóbair, 427.
d’ḟóbair, 427.
dob é, 336.
dóiġ, 315*b*.
doirnín, 199*a*.
dola, 415.
Doṁnaċ, 447.
dornán, 199*a*.
dorus, 65.
dóṫain, 198.

draoi, 114.
droċ, 493, 494(2).
druim, 43(4), 101.
duaḋas, 419.
duais, 87.
duḃart, 359.
duḃartas, 359.
duine, 114.
dul, 415.
dulta, 415.
dún, 67, 315*a*.

É, 211, 535.
eaċ, 70.
eaċraḋ, 70.
eaḋ, 213.
éadtromas, 462.
éag, 646.
éagcáirdeas, 462.
eagla, 649.
éan, 61.

éanlaiṫ, 70.
easna, 114.
éigeas, 65.
eigin(t), 197.
eile, 197.
éinín, 32, *note*.
éinne, 64, 241.
Éire, 127, 473(2)
eo, 238.
eorna, 131.
eudaċ, 58.
eun, 61.

Fá, 190, 228, 623
faca, 279, 392.
faċta, 376.
faċtar, 370.
facṫas, 392.
fad, 603.
fada, 166.
fág, 316*f*.

faġ, 316*f*, 368.
fágfad, 280.
faic, 388.
faiġtí, 371.
fan, 14, 316*c*.
faoi, 190, 228, 623.
fás, 290, 316*a*.
féaċ, 387.
feaca, 392.
fead, 316*f*.
féadaim, 428.
féadamar, 425.
feadar, 425.
feadramar, 425.
fear, 62, 69.
féar, 14, 62.
fearaṁail, 147.
fearr, 11, 166.
feic, 386.
féiċ, 66.
feiċeaṁ, 131.

feicseana, 396.
féiġ, 66.
féile, 106.
féin, 206
feis, 87.
feiscint, 396.
feiṫ, 316*e*.
feoil, 99.
fiaċ, 66.
fiċe, 175, 511.
fiċead, 168.
fíon, 14, 97.
fíor, 161.
firín, 32 (note).
fiú, 433, 642.
flaiṫeaṁail, 35*b*.
focal, 66.
foclóir, 43(4).
fóir, 259.
fóiriṫin, 259.
fogus, 166.

foigse, 166.
fós, 14.
freuṁ, 83.
friġ, 132.
friġde, 132.
friṫ, 372.
fuaċt, 94.
fuagair, 301.
fuagra, 313.
fuaim, 87, 90.
fuair, 279.
fuarṫas, 372.
fuide, 166.
fuiltear, 321.
fuláir, 644.
furus, 166.
fusa, 166.

Ga, 132.
ġá, 544.
gaḃ, 316*f*, 364.

gaḃa, 122.
gaḃáil, 290.
gaḃfad, 367.
gaċ, 201
gaċ aon, 242.
gaċ re, 201.
gaċ uile, 241.
gaeṫe (ga), 132.
gan, 580, 606(2), 624.
gar, 166.
Gearóid, 115.
gé, 132.
geal, 132.
géanna, 132.
gearr, 141, 166.
ġeiḃim, 370.
geit, 43(4).
geoḃad, 365.
ġeoḃad, 373.
geug, 80.
gibé, 235.

gi*d*ea*d*, 452.
gile, 106.
giorra, 166.
glas, 165.
glé, 161.
gluais, 87.
*g*ním, 379.
gnío*m*, 105.
*g*níos, 379.
gnó, 10, 114.
go, *conj.*, 26*e*, 235, 549
go, *prep.*, 39, 625.
go ceann, 613*d*.
go dé mar, 435.
goin, 315*b*.
gránda, gráinde, 10, 166.
grainín, 199.
greim, 43(4), 102, 200.
grian, 81.
guil, 316*b*.
gur, 278.

guṫ, 104.

I, 39, 186, 226, 604, 627
í, *pron.*, 211.
í, *noun*, Ua, 132.
iar, *prep.*, 579.
iar, 440.
iarṫar, 442.
idir, 229, 602(1), 628.
i mbáraċ, 434.
imearṫa, 314.
in, *pronoun*, 238.
in, *prep.*, 39, 535, 627.
in (ion) *prefix*, 286.
indé, 434.
in-ḟeicseana, 396.
i ndiaiḋ, 449.
innis, 35*c*.
iomad, 198.
iomarca, 198.
iomḋa, 166, 493.

iomṫúsa, 603.
ioná, 156.
ion-ṁolta, 285.
ionṁuin, 166.
ionnus, 452.
íosad, 417.
is, *conj.*, 170.
is, *verb*, 156, 333, 584.
ísiol, 141.
isteaċ, 433, 436.
istiġ, 433, 436.
iṫe, 416.
iúd, *pronoun*, 238.

Lá, 132.
laḃair, 35*c*, 315*c*.
laċa, 123.
laeṫe (lá), 132.
laeṫeanta (lá), 132.
Laiġin, 130.
laistiġ, 438.

laisteas, 441.
laistiar, 441.
laiṫċe, 86.
lán, 198.
laoċraḋ, 70.
lasair, 35*a*.
lastall, 438.
lastoir, 441.
lastuaiḋ, 441.
laṫaċ, 86.
le, 39, 154, 187, 221, 613*d*, 629.
leabaḋ, 105.
leaḃar, 18, 69.
leac, 88.
leag, 316*d*.
lean, 316*c*.
leanḃ, 9, 64.
leanaṁna, 290.
leapa, 105.
leas, 421.
leasmuiġ, 438.

léig, 316*d*.
léiġ, 315*a*.
léim, 87.
léine, 113.
ler, 278.
lerḃ, 542.
lia, 166.
lil, 75.
líon, 67.
litir, 88.
ló (lá), 132.
loċ, 15.
long, 10, 82.
Luan, 447.
luċ, 87.
luċt, 115.
luġa, 160, 166.
luiḃ, 87.

Má, 21*g*.
mac, 64, 69, 487, etc.

macraḋ, 70.
madaḋ, 65.
maidin, 35*a*.
maiḋm, 104.
máilín, 32 (note).
Máirt, 447.
maiseaḋ, 452.
maiṫ, 143, 166.
maiṫeas, 42*d*.
mála, 14, 110.
mallaċt, 94.
maor, 55.
mar, 21*g*, 453, 557.
-ṁar, 467*b*.
marcaċ, 57.
marcuiġeaċt, 565.
margaḋ, 9, 65.
máṫair, 132.
meacan, 66.
méar, 14.
measa, 166.

mí, 132.
míle, 113, 175, 176, 511.
milis, 144.
mill, 315*a*.
minic, 166.
míniġ, 315*e*.
mionca, 166.
míonna (mí), 132.
míosa (mí), 132.
misde, 163.
mise, 205.
mná, 132.
mo, 179, 521.
mó, 166.
móide, 163.
móin, 103, 131.
mol, 315*a*.
molaḋ, 289.
molta, 284.
mór, 137, 166.
mórán, 198.

mór-ṡeisear, 177.
muḋa, 433.
muid 270.
múille, 113.
Muiris, 115.
mullaċ, 58.
muna, 26*e*, 550.
munar, 278.
múr, 67.

Na, 14, 40*f*.
ná, 14, 156.
ná go, 452.
naċ, *conj.*, 26*e*.
naċ, *rel. pron.*, 235.
naċar, 278(6).
náṁa, 119.
naoi, 507.
naonḃar, 177.
nár, 278(6), 549.
-ne, 184.

neaċ, 64.
neaṁ-, *prefix*, 455.
neart, 64, 198, 650.
neasa, 166.
neiṁ-, 455.
neiṁ-ġeanaṁlaċt, 462.
neul, 67.
ní, 21*g*.
ní, *noun*, 487, &c.
nic, 487, &c.
níḋ, 114, 157, 158.
níor, 278.
níos, 157, 158.
noċ, 234.
nó go, 550.
nuaḋ, 494(2).
nuair, 557.

O, *pronoun*, 238.
ó, *noun*, 132, 487, &c.
ó, *prep.*, 189, 222.

obair, 35*a*, 88.
oċt, 507.
ó ḋeas, 441.
oiḋċe, 434.
oileán, 62.
oiread, 198.
oirṫear, 442.
ól, 316*a*.
olann, 35*a*.
olc, 166.
óráid, 88.
órḋa, 148.
órlaċ, 58.
ós, 632.
osgail, 298 (note).
ó ṫuaiḋ, 441.

Pádraig, 115.
paidir, 88.
páirc, 87.
Paoraċ, 486.

’pé i, 69.[W 1]
peann, 66.
pearsa, 120.
piġinn, 35*a*.
pinginn, 35*a*, 199.

Raḃtar, 329.
raḃtas, 325.
raġad, 412.
ránag, 420.
rángas, 420.
raiḃ, 279, 325.
ráiḋte, 363.
reaṁar, 141.
réim, 87.
reub, 259.
rí, 32.
riaċtain, 421.
riaċtanas, 421.
rian, 64.
riġim, 420.

riġṫe, 132.
rinne, 381.
ríoġ, 161.
ríoġa, 132.
riṫ, 290, 316*a*.
ro, 279.
ró, 161.
roċtain, 421.
roiṁ, 224, 633.
roimis, 224.
roinnt, 199.
rug, 279.

Sa(c)sana, 130, 473(2).
saiḋḃir, 35*b*.[W 2]
sáiṫ, 98.
sain, 238.
sall, 438.
san, 238.
sár, 161.
Saṫarn, 447.

saoi, 114.
sé, *pronoun*, 210.
sé, *numeral*, 508.
-se, 184.
seaċt, 507.
seaċtar, 177, 481.
seamróg, 152.
-sean, 184.
sean, 494(2).
séan, 14.
seas, 316*e*.
seisean, 205.
seisear, 177, 481.
seo, 195, 238.
seod, 66.
seol, 67.
sgaoil, 315*b*.
sgar, 316*c*.
sgéal, 66, 67.
sgeana, 86.
sgeuluiḋe, 42*c*.

sgian, 86.
sgiaṫ, 131.
sgine, 86.
sgoil, 87.
sgríobfad, 280.
sguir, 316*b*.
sí, 210.
sia, 166.
siar, 441.
sidé, sidí, 239.
sin, *adj.*, 14, 195
sin, *pronoun*, 238
sín, 14.
siné, siní, 239.
síos, 436.
siuḃail, 35*c*, 290.
siúd, 238.
siúr, 132.
slaḃraḋ, 65.
slán, 66.
slat, 88.

sliaḃ, 132.
sliġe, 131.
sloinne, 113.
sluaġ, 68.
smuain, 315*b*.
smeur, 66.
snáṁ, 316*a*.
so, *adj.*, 195.
so, *pron.*, 238.
so, *prefix*, 286, 455.
socair, 145.
soin, 195.
soir, 441.
speur, 89.
sráid, 87.
srian, 64.
sroiċim, 420.
sroisim, 420.
srón, 131.
sruṫ, 104.
suas, 436.

súd, 238.
súil, 49(1), 90.
sul, 14, 551, 558
súl, 14, 49(1), 90.

Taḃair, 346.
tagaim, 400.
táim, 318.
táin, 103.
ṫáinig, 279, 393.
talaṁ, 131.
ṫall, 438.
tánag, 402.
ṫángas, 403.
tar, *verb*, 399.
tar, *prep.*, 230, 634.
ṫárla, 426.
táṫar, 320.
te, 148, 166.
té, 237.
teaċ, 132.

teaċt, 406.
teagaim, 400.
Teaṁair, 128.
ṫeas, 440, 441.
téiġ, 408.
teilg, 316*d*.
teine, 113, 131.
téiriġ, 409.
teo, 148, 166.
ṫiar, 440, 441.
tiḋeaċt, 406.
tig, 132.
tiġearna, 112.
tím, 390.
timċeall, 603.
tinneas, 649.
tíoḋaċt, 406.
tír, 89.
tirim, 166.
tiorma, 166.
ṫíos, 436.

tiubrad, 351.
tobar, 68.
toil, 92.
ṫoir, 440, 441.
toisg, 603.
trasna, 603.
tré, 39, 231, 604, 635.
treas, 505.
treasna, 603.
treise, 166.
tréig, 316*d*.
treun, 166.
triúr, 177, 481.
troiġ 76 (note).
trom, 162, 462.
truaill, 88.
tú, 531.
ṫuaiḋ, 440, 441.
tuaisceart, 442.
ṫuas, 436.
tug, 279.

ṫúir, 89.
túisge, 166.
tuilleaḋ, 198.
tusa, 205.

Ua, 132.
uair, 87.
ualaċ, 58.
uasal, 35*b*, 141.
uḃ, 88.
uḃall, 66.
úd, 196.
ui, 132, 489.
uile, 197, 201.
uinge, 114.
Ulaiḋ, 130.
um, 232, 636.
úr, 161.
urus, 166.
usa, 166.

Ar n-a ċur i gcló
d’ Ua Caṫail agus d’á ḃuiḋean
35, 36 agus 37 Sráid Ṁór an Tráġa,
Baile-aṫa-Cliaṫ.

Cite error: <ref> tags exist for a group named "W", but no corresponding <references group="W"/> tag was found

Notes (Wikisource)

Cite error: `<ref>` tags exist for a group named "W", but no corresponding `<references group="W"/>` tag was found

About this digital edition

This e-book comes from the online library Wikisource[1]. This multilingual digital library, built by volunteers, is committed to developing a free accessible collection of publications of every kind: novels, poems, magazines, letters...

We distribute our books for free, starting from works not copyrighted or published under a free license. You are free to use our e-books for any purpose (including commercial exploitation), under the terms of the Creative Commons Attribution-ShareAlike 3.0 Unported[2] license or, at your choice, those of the GNU FDL[3].

Wikisource is constantly looking for new members. During the transcription and proofreading of this book, it's possible that we made some errors. You can report them at this page[4].

The following users contributed to this book:

- Mahagaja
- ShakespeareFan00
- Eliyak
- Rocket000
- Bender235
- AzaToth

- Tene~commonswiki
- Bromskloss
- KABALINI
- Boris23
- Auric
- Inductiveload
- IncognitoErgoSum~commonswiki
- BlobcatsAreCool
- Reboot01
- Gavin.collins
- Billinghurst
- PatríciaR

---

1. ↑ https://en.wikisource.org
2. ↑ https://www.creativecommons.org/licenses/by-sa/3.0
3. ↑ https://www.gnu.org/copyleft/fdl.html
4. ↑ https://en.wikisource.org/wiki/Wikisource:Scriptorium